तत्वार्थ सूत्रम्

TATVARTHA SUTRAM

(A Treatise on the Essentials of Jainism)

By

Griddhrapinchchacharya Sri Umaswami Maharaj



Originally Edited by

(Late) J L JAINI M A

Bar - at - Law, Judge, High Court Indore

Re-published by

BARRISTER CHAMPAT RAI JAIN TRUST

Controlling Authority

DELHI.



on the occassion of

SEMINAR ON JAINISM AND UNIVERSAL PEACE

NOVEMBER 1956

FOREWORD

Tatvarth Sutra is rightly termed and known as **Jaina Bible** and enjoys the unique distinction of being regarded as an authoritative work by all sections of the Jains

The first edition of this book with introduction translation notes and commentary in English by late J L Jaini M A was published in 1920 by Kumar Devendra Prasad[1] from the central Jain Publishing House Arrah as Volume II of the sacred books of the Jains The publication soon got exhausted and for the last 15 years copies of this publication were not at all available We had a great longing to bring out a second edition and were in contact with the Trustees of R B J L Jaini Trust but our efforts did not bear fruit.

Some enthusiastic Jains wishing to avail of the presence in the Capital of India of over 800 delegates of 80 countries of the world in UNESCO Conference and 100 delegates to the Buddhism seminar thought of holding a seminar on Jainism and universal peace and Exhibition of Jain Art and Culture One of the main items for the seminar was presentation of standard works on Jainism to the national libraries of foreign countries and to the emminent delegates of UNESCO Conference and Buddha Jayanti

The idea was talked over to Shri 108 Acharya Deshbhushan Ji Maharaj who greatly appreciated it and advised that the sacred works of the Jains should be immediately republished on this occassion The present edition has been possible only because of his zeal and untiring efforts Under his direction a few benevolent Jains readily came forward to donate for the entire paper required for this publication Acharya Shri under his direct supervision got the text typed for press purposes and looked to the minutest detail at all stages

Acharya Shri is a Digamber Jain saint of the highest order and is always engrossed in meditation and self study The community greatly needs teachers like him under whose able guidance the society can make remarkable progress

Paper for the publication having been so arranged upon we took it ourselves to go in for this much needed publication

We are extremly grateful to the trustees of R B J L Jaini Trust who readily accorded us permission for re-printing of this book We also express our gratitude to our benevolent Jain friends who have borne the entire cost of the paper used in this publication

Our thanks are due to Shri Basheshar Nath Jain Pahari Dhiraj Delhi and Shree Munendra Kumar Jain, M A J D who have helped us at all stages in bringing out this publication in such a short time

Adishwar Prasad Jain M A
for Controlling Authority
BARRISTER CHAMPAT RAI
Jain Trust DELHI

Delhi
30th November, 1956

INTRODUCTION

The author of *Tatvartha Sutra* is the most famous disciple of the universally worshipped saint Kundakunda This relationship between Kundakunda and Umasvami is established by an inscription No 108 written in 1365 Saka found at Sravana Belgola in Mysore. (*Siddhanta Bhaskara* Nos 2 and 3, pp 117 and 122; also No 4 51 p Cf also the Gurvavali in Pandavapurana by Sri Subha Chandra about 1600 Vikrama Samvat)

As Kundakunda was a Griddhrapichcharay so his disciple Umasvami also was called one For in some MSS of *Tatvartha Sutra*, a shloka is found appended in the end

तत्त्वार्थ सूत्रकर्त्तारं गृद्ध्रपिच्छोपलक्षितम् ।
वंदे गणीन्द्र मयातम् उमास्वामी मुनीश्वरम ॥

The age of Kundakunda and Umasvami is well-established The tradition is universal and is adverted to in all Jain books found in Jain Libraries all over Old written *MSS* in the bhandaras of Jaipur and Idar also bear it out (See also *Indian Antiquary* Vol XXI, mentioned in Bhaskara No 4 pp 78 and 204)

The age was so correct as to the central tradition of Jainism that the works of these two Great Saints command universal acceptance and reverence both from the Svetambaras and Digambaras

Place of *Tatvartha Sutra* in Jain Sacred Literature

Our revered author Sri Umasvami flourished A V 714—798 If Lord Mahavira attained Nirvana in 527 B C then Umasvami lived 135—219 A D This is roughly the tradition Anyhow *Tatvartha Sutra* is a very old book more than 1700 years old It falls at the very opening of the period when the great omniscient successors of Vira disappeared and the later Pontiffs began to rise Thus as to date its place is in the second half of the first millennium after Vira

As to the 4 Divisions of Jaina Literature Cosmology History Philosophy and Ritual, *Tatvartha Sutra* has its place in Philosophy (Dravyanuyoga)

As to the old non-extant Literature, *Tatvartha Sutra* has descended from the sixth Anga Jnatridharmakatha, and the second *Pvrva* Agrayini

As to extant Literature, it is nearly at the end of the submerged tradition of Vira ond Gautama's Word (abut 600 B C), of the wisdom of the two *Bhadrabaus* (400 B C) and then forms the first glorious successor of the great works of Kundakundacharya (100 A D) and then looks forward about the same distance of time ahead to the learned and lucid Prakrit Gathas of Sri Nemi Chandra Siddhanta Chakravati (1000 A D)

IMPORTANCE AND SANCTITY OF TATVARTHA SUTRA

The book contains only 10 short chapters but its value is in inverse proportion to its size It is revered both by the Digambara and Svatmbara sections of the Jain community The whole of Jain philosophy is taught in it There is no Jain doctrine or dogma which is not expressed or implied in these aphorisms Verily *Tatvartha Sutra* is a sacred epitome of Jainism

It is recited by millions of mouths every day in temples and in private houses Indeed it is held that one recitation of this book brings as much pious merit as a fast of one day

दशाध्याये परिच्छिन्ने तत्वार्थे पठिते सति ।
फलस्यादुपवासस्य भाषित मुनिपुगवै ॥

It is deservedly the text book of the religion of Tirthamkaras *par excellence* How great and authoritative it is recognised to be will be further evident from the fact that it is perhaps the most commented-upon book in Jain Literature No less than 31 commentaries of it are known to be extant now



AUTHOR'S LIFE

Very little is known at present of the life of the Author His name was Umasvami, or according to the Svetambara version Uma svati His spiritual descent is given below

It is known that Umasvami renounced the world at the early age of 19 years He remained an ascetic for 25 years Then he became the head of ascetics (Acharya) From these we get the following brief sketch of dates in his life

A very interesting story is told of how this Great Gem of a Jain sacred book came to be written

In Gujarat (Saurastra) there lived a Jain layman Dvaipayaka He was a very pious man and withal learned in Jaina religious lore He was anxious to write some really great Jain book But worldly cares forbade the execution of such an unworldly undertaking To conquer this obstacle he made a vow not to take his food unless he had made at least one aphorism every day Thus if he missed adding one aphorism to his book any day he had to go fasting for that day For the theme of his book he took *Liberation* And put his resolve that very day in practice He thought out and made the first aphorism as दर्शन ज्ञान चारित्राणि मोक्ष मार्ग Belief knowledge conduct (united constitute) the path to Liberation Fearing least he should forget it he transcribed it upon a side of a pillar in his house

Next day Dvaipayaka chanced to go away from his home on some business In his absence his house was visited by a Saint

The wife of Dvaipayaka herself a pious woman received the Saint and entertained him The Saint s eyes fell upon the aphorism on the pillar He thought over it for a moment and then added the word सम्यक् before it ; and departed

When Dvaipayaka returned and saw the correction in his aphorism he questioned his wife She had not seen the Saint do it and said so but suggested to the husband that it must have been made by the Saint

The layman author on this ran at once to find out the noble Saint to whom he was indebted for such an-invaluable and redical correction He came upon an order of monks at the outskirts of the town and saw the head of the order sitting in his radiant peace

He at once concluded that this must be the Saint He fell at the feet of the Saint and made a most humble and heart-felt entreaty that the work was beyond his poor layman's wits and that the saint should oblige him and the world by completing the book the first aphorism of which had been corrected by the Saint in such a providential manner The Saint was moved by compassion and finished the book

This Saint was none other than our *Umasvami*, and the completed book is *Tattvartha Sutra*

The book is an exposition of the 7 Principles of Jainism i, e, the 7 *Tattvas*

The opening *Sutra* serves the purpose of an Introduction Justification and Recapitulation of the whole book It was necessary to indicate the position of the Principles (*Tattva* in the whole range of Jain Knowledge They are the subject-matter of right belief, and the relation of the two can not be appreciated fully unless we consider the position of right belief in the scheme of Jain philosophy This position is indicated by the first Sutra This brings us to the Justification also The first purpose of everything Living is Happiness to be worth anything must be eternal faultless and independent Such happiness is identical with the Jaina conception of Liberation. Right belief in and right knowledge of the 7 Principles along with a life led in the light of the knowledge, and firmly established on the basis of the belief is the sole threefold path of final and everlasting deliverance Thus the first Sutra is a justification of the book which deals with these basic principles of belief and action. It is also a Recapitulation because the whole book can easily be seen to be merely an expansion of the various aspects, details and developments of this mighty and all comprehensive Sutra of Jainism

The ground-plan of the book itself admits of analysis as follows

The whole book consists of 357 Sutras divided into 10 chapters with 33 53 39 42 42 27, 39, 26 47, and 9 Sutras respectively

---



श्री जैनाचार्य उमास्वामी विरचित

तत्त्वार्थ सूत्रम्

TATVARTHA SUTRAM

Saudharama Indra enquired the gist of the following verses from Indrabhuti Gautama with a view to bring him before Lord Mahavira

त्रकाल्य द्रव्यषट्क नवपदसहित जीवषट्कायलेश्या ।
पचान्येचास्तिकाया व्रतसमितिगतिज्ञानचारित्रभेदा ॥
इत्येतन् मोक्षमूल त्रिभुवनमहितै प्रोक्तमर्हद्भिरीश ।
प्रत्येति श्रद्दधाति स्पृशति च मतिमान् य स वै शुद्धदृष्टि ॥

i e Three (divisions of) *Time* (Present, Past and Future) six *Dravyas* (substances)[1] with nine *Padarthas* (categories)[2] six kinds of embodied souls[3] six thought-points[4], the five *Astikayas* (embodied substances)[5], the five *Vratas* (vows)[6] the five kinds of *Samiti* (carefulness)[7] the five kinds of *Gati* (conditions of existence)[8], the five kinds of *Jnana* (knowledge)[9] the five kinds of *Charitra* (conduct)[10], these are the root principles of liberation as described by *Arhats* [the adored ones] who are perfect and the great lords of the three worlds (upper, middle and lower) The wise man who knows these is convinced of them and who realises these is verily one who has attained right belief

The e two Gathas of *Prakrit* Language are on the basis of *Bhagwati Aradhana*

सिद्धे जयप्पसिद्धे चउविह आराहणाफल पत्ते ।
वदित्ता अरहते वोच्छ आराहणा कमसो ॥

(2) Having bowed to the *Siddhas* (liberated ones) who are renowned in the universe and who have gained the fruits of four kinds of *Aradhana* (devotion) and to the *Arhats* (the adored ones) I shall speak of the devotions in their order

उज्जोवणमुज्जवण णिव्वहण साहण च णित्थरण ।
दमण णाण-चरित्त तवाणमराहणा भणिया ।।

This verse is originated in *Sarvarth Siddhi* by its author Shri Pujyapad Acharya

(3) Right belief, right knowledge right conduct and right austerities are called the *Aradhanas* These should enlighten the mind be pursued continued grasped firmly and carried on to perfection.

Shri Umaswami Acharya with a view to advise the Path of Liberation starts the *Tatvarth Sutra* with the following *sutra* -

मंगलाचरण

मोक्षमार्गस्य नेतार भेत्तार कर्मभूभृताम् ।
ज्ञातार विश्वतत्त्वाना वंदे तद्गुणलब्धये ।।

(4) I bow to him who is the guide on the path to liberation the destroyer of mountains of *Karmas* and the Knower of the principles of the universe, so that I may attain these qualities belonging to him



प्रथम अध्याय

FIRST CHAPTER

SUTRA 1

सम्यग्दर्शनज्ञानचारित्राणि मोक्षमार्गः ॥ १ ॥

Samyagdarsana jnanacharitrani moksha margah (1)

सम्यग्दर्शन *Samyagdarsana* Right Darsana (belief) सम्यग्ज्ञान *Samyagjnana*, Right *Jnana* (knowledge) सम्यक्चारित्र *Samyak Charitra* Right *Charitra* (conduct) मोक्षमार्ग *Moksha margah* the path to liberation.

1. Right belief (right) knowledge (right) conduct these (together constitute) the path to liberation

COMMENTARY

Right belief Right knowledge and Right conduct are called the three gems (*Ratna traya*) in Jain works Each of these three can be considered in its three fold aspect *viz*, the subject, the object and the means. For example in right belief there is the believer that which is believed and the means of belief Similarly in right knowledge there is the knower the known and the means of knowledge and in right conduct we have the pursuer of conduct the conduct itself and the means of conduct

Every mundane soul is embodied and exists in combination with *Karmas* In a pure soul this partnership between the soul and *Karmas* is dissolved The soul attains liberation (*Moksha*) Then in self-absorption (Svasamaya) it enjoys for ever its own qualities consisting among others of the infinite quaternary (*Ananta-chatustaya*) *viz* infinite conation infinite knowledge infinite Power and infinite bliss

The way to liberation on the attainment of which the soul will be freed from *Karmas* and possessed of the aforesaid qualities with others lies in right belief right knowledge and right conduct To attain liberation all the three must be simultaneously pursued The path may be compared to a ladder with its two side-poles and the centeral rungs or rounds forming the steps The side pieces are right belief and right knowledge and the steps, gradual stages of right

conduct We can go up the ladder only when all the three are sound The absence of one makes ascent impossible Thus a simultaneous pursuit of right belief, right knowledge and right conduct is enjoined here

Of those three, right belief is the basis upon which the other two rests It is an essential preliminary to right knowledge It is the cause and right knowledge is the effect, Right knowledge always implies it Similarly right conduct is preceded and caused by right knowledge and implies both right knowledge and right belief For this reason, in the aphorism we find right belief mentioned first, then right knowledge and lastly right conduct

SUTRA 2

तत्वार्थं श्रद्धानं सम्यग्दर्शनम् ॥ २ ॥

Tatvartha sradhanam Samyagdarsanam. (2)

Belief or conviction in things ascertained as they are (is) right belief.

तत्वार्थ *Tatvartha* तत्व *Tatva* really means thatness, a thing as it is, अर्थ *Artha* means that which is ascertained तत्वार्थ *Tatvaratha* means things ascertained as they are

Tatvas may be translated as the Principles of Jainism

तत्वार्थ *Tatvartha*—तत्वेन—अर्थ

—By thatness ascertained object
—Object which is ascertained by thatness
—That which is ascertained by it own thatness
—Objects as they are

सम्यक्त्व *Samyaktva* or सम्यग्दर्शन, Samyagdarsna, is of 2 kinds —

सरागसम्यक्त्व *Sarag Samyaktva,* belief with attachment This is indexed by the 4 signs of —

(1) प्रशम *Prashama,* calmness; non-operation of error feeding passions and of deluding *Karmas*

(2) संवेग *Samvega,* fear of mundane existance in 5 cycles of wanderings —द्रव्य *Dravya,* matter; क्षेत्र *Kshetra,* place; काल *Kala,* time; भाव *bhava,* thought-condition of existance, bhava thought activity

(3) अनुकम्पा *Anukampa* compassion for all living beings (mobile त्रस *Trasa* and स्थावर *Sthaavara,* im-mobile)

(4) आस्तिक्य *Astikya* belief in the principles, soul, non soul, etc. वीतराग सम्यक्त्व *Vitraga Samyaktva* belief without attachment i.e the purity of the soul itself

SUTRA 3

तन्निसर्गादधिगमाद्वा ॥ ३ ॥

Tannisargadadhigamadva - (3)

This (right belief is attained) by —

(1) निसर्गज *Nisargaj*, intuition, independently of the precept for others ; or

(2) अधिगमज *Adhigamaj* intuition, acquistion of knowledge from external sourses e g by precept of others or reading the scriptures

In reality right belief is the result of.—

(1) उपशम *Upashama*, subsidence,

(2) क्षयोपशम *Kshayopashama* destruction-subsidence or partial subsidence destruction and operation, and

(3) क्षय *Kshaya* destruction, of दर्शन मोहनीय कर्म *Darshana Mohniya Karma* [right belief deluding Karmas] and the four अनन्तानुबंधी कषाय *Anantanubandhi Kashaya* the four error-feeding passions

These are internal, but there are external causes as --

(1) द्रव्य *Dravya* matter, e. g, images of adorable अर्हत *Arhat* precept rememberance of the past lives, etc.

(2) क्षेत्र *Kshetra* place e g समवसरण *Samavasarna* Hall of Audience or where the Lord preach the Truth.

(3) काल *Kala*, time, i. e, right belief is attained only when the interval to the souls —attaining liberation is less than half the time taken by one soul in its matter cycle, i e in its emobodiments in all matter (अर्द्ध पुद्गल परावर्तन, *Ardhapudgala-parivartana*)

(4) भाव करण *Bhava Karna* thought activity, this is called efficiency, or करण *Karna* It is the 5th of the लब्धि *Labdhis*. The five *labdhis* attaiments, are—

1 क्षयोपशम लब्धि *Kshayopashama labdhi* destructive-subsidential attain ment attainment by a soul (by the subsidenee destruction and operat ion of certain *Karmas*) of such sences mind etc., that he may be able to acquire right belief

विशुद्धि लब्धि *Vishudhi labdhi*, virtue attainment, attainment of a disposition for good and against bad actions

देशना लब्धि, *Deshana labdhi*, precept attainment, attainment of an inclination to know the Truth This reduces the स्थिति *Sthiti* duration of *Karmas* except the आयुकर्म *Ayukarma*, the age *Karma* to a maximum of कोड़ा कोड़ी *Koda kodi* crore of crores and a minimum of one crore सागर *Sagras*

प्रायोग्यलब्धि *Prayogya labdhi*, competency attainment attainment of thought activity which further reduces the स्थिति *Sthiti* duration of the 7 *Karmas* i e, all except the आयुकर्म *Ayukarma*, age *Karma* But as to intensity of fruition the reduction applies only to dementorious *Karmas* The meritorious *Karmas* are proportionally increased in intensity of fruition (अनुभाग *Anubhaga*)

करणलब्धि Karna labdhi efficieny attainment, attainment of thought activity which must cause right belief in अन्तर्मुहूर्त *Antar muharta*, within 48 minutes Of these 5, the last can be attained only by a soul capable of attaining liberation and the remaining four by all

SUTRA 4

जीवाजीवास्रवबन्धसंवरनिर्जरामोक्षास्तत्त्वम् ॥ ४ ॥

Jiva jivasrava bandha Samvara nirjara mokshas tatvam (4)

The तत्त्व *Tatvas* principles (are) जीव *Jiva* soul अजीव *Ajiva* non-soul; आस्रव *Asrava*, inflow (of karmic matter into the soul) बन्ध *bandha* bondage [of soul by karmic matter]; संवर *Samvara* stopage [of inflow of karmic matter into the soul]; निर्जरा *Nirjara* shedding [of karmic matter by the soul (and) मोक्ष *Moksha* Liberation [of soul from matter]

Note 1 Soul s characteristic is चेतना *Chetna* consciousness It is of 3 kinds

ज्ञानचेतना *Jnana chetana* consciousness or experience of pure knowledge in its full extent it is found only in the Omniscient; but it begins to be experienced from the 4th spritual stage of development

2 कर्मचेतना *Karma chetana* consciousness of experience of action

3 कर्मफलचेतना *Karma phala chetana* experience of fruition of *karmas*

अजीव *Ajiva* non soul is that which is deviod of all these 3 kinds of consciousness

Note 2. Many Sacred books treat of 9 पदार्थ *Padarthas*, categories They add to these 7 tatvas, पुण्य *Punya* and पाप *Papa* merit and demerit But these two are really included in the third and fourth

principles, आस्रव *Asrava* and बंध *Bandha* the inflow into and bondage of the soul by good or bad Karmic matter according to merit or demirt [treated of in Chaper VIII 25 26 below] is the active cause.

Note 3 These 7 तत्त्व *tatva* principles are evidently necessary and sufficient They are necessary, because there must be at least two exhaustive categories of the universe By dichotomy they are logically prefect They are the soul and the non-soul. Their union is manifest in the world The absolute liberation of soul from the non soul is the ultimate goal, therefore मोक्ष *Moksha* category is placed last in the सूत्र *Sutras* Its immediate causes are stopage and shedding of karmas Therefore संवर *Samvara and Nirjara* precede मोक्ष *Moksha* in the enumeration. Stopage and shedding are necessitated by the inflow and bondage of karmic matter therefore आस्रव *Asrava* and बंध *Bandha* are given as the third and fourth categories Thus we see that the 7 *tatvas* are necessary

They are sufficient also Soul and non-soul together constitute the universe If they are separated, nothing more is needed If they are united as they are found to be in the world then the cause of their union the union itself the stopage and the gradual and then the final destruction of the union are the only possible ways of considering them Thus the seven principles are sufficeint also

तत्त्व *tatvas* substances are only two, soul and non soul. Non-soul is all that is not soul Therefore the really knowable and worth-knowing object is the soul In गाथा *Gatha* 20 of दर्शन पाहुड *Darsana Pahuda* it is said णिच्छयदो अप्पाणं हवइ सम्मत्तं *Nichchaya do appanam Havai sammattam* i e. in reality soul's own nature is सम्यग्दर्शन *Samyag darsana* Belief expereintial belief in real soul itself is *Samyag darsana* Does not the Greek philospher also teach us "know thyself 'Gnothi seaution

SUTRA 5

नामस्थापनाद्रव्यभावतस्तन्न्यासः ॥५॥

Nama sthapana dravya bhavatas tannyasah (5)

By *Nama*, name *Sthapana* representation *Dravya* privation *Bhava* present condition their न्यास *Nyasa*, aspects (are Known)

They (सम्यग्दर्शनादि right belief, etc , and जीवाजीवादि soul, non-soul etc) can be considered in four aspects or निक्षेप *Nikshepa* -

(1) नाम निक्षेप *Nama nikshepa* name or negative aspect, that is the name is attributed for the mere naming of the object which does not posses the qualities connoted by the name. As a man may be called King or Smith even if he is neither a king nor a smith

(2) स्थापना निक्षेप *Sthapana nikshepa*, representative aspect. Representation of one thing by another e. g, installation of Lord Mahavira in a marble or diamond image. Or in Algebra, taking X to be equal to so and so The first is called तदाकारस्थापना, *Tadakara sthapana* or सद्भाव *Sadbhavo*, i e, the representative and the represented are similar in figure; the other is अतदाकार स्थापना; *Atadakara sthapana* or असद्भाव *Asad-bhava*, i e the representative bears no resemblance to what is represented. Such representation of the अर्हत *Arhats* (the Adored ones) is not allowed in this हुन्डा अवसर्पिणी; *Hunda Avasarpini* the aeon of decrease in which there are special features of decrease e. g, birth of a daughter to a तीर्थङ्कर *Tirthankara*, etc.

(3) द्रव्य निक्षेप *Dravya nikshepa* privative aspect The absence of an attribute in a subject which it possessed in the past or must possess in the future; the attributing of a name; the qualities of which one does not posses now, although one possessed them in the past or is sure to possess them in the future e g a Dowager queen may still be called queen, and a dethroned monarch may be called a king after deposition also; and a President-elect may well be called the President

Take the Professor of Surgery --

(1) He is dining He knows Surgery but is not attentive to it now To call him Professor of Surgery is आगमद्रव्य निक्षेप *Agama Dravya Nihksepa*

(2) But if we think of his body only, then we have नोआगम द्रव्य निक्षेप *No Agama dravya Nikhsepa*

e g, (1) ज्ञायक शरीर, *Jnayaka Sarira*

(i) He is asleep To call his body, the Professor of Surgery is वर्तमान, *Vartmana*

(ii) He has ceased to be Professor of Surgery and has become a baker To call his body, the Professor of Surgery, till his death, is अनागत, *Anagata*

(iii) He dies and is in his coffin To call the body, the Professor of Surgry is अतीत, *Atita*

(2) भावी *Bhavi* He is going to be born a king To call his body a king s body is *Bhavi*

(3) तद्व्यतिरिक्त *Tadvyatirikta* --

(i) The Professor was a great and practical philanthropist and had otherwise done deeds to secure rebirth as a king To attribute to his body the karmic matter of these deeds is कर्म *Karma*

(ii) To attribute the actual particles of which his kingly body will be formed is नो कर्मो आगम द्रव्य निक्षेप *No Karma no agam dravya nikshepa*

(4) भावी निक्षेप *Bhavi nikshepa* Positive aspect or present condition It signifies the possession of its present attributes Giving a thing a name connoting the attributes of its present condition only e g a General considered as in actual command of his army It is also आगम *Agama* i e when the soul knows and is actually attentive and नोआगम *Noagama* when the actual present condition of a material thing is referred to

नाम निक्षेप *Nama nikshepa* *Nama* means mere name Nikshepa is a verbal or nominal or linguistic aspect The सप्त तत्व *Sapta tatva* seven names of Principles apply to the Principles, but they may even be given to something which is not a तत्व *tatva* Principle e g आस्रव *Asrava*, in Buddhism means sin This is नाम निक्षेप *Nama Nikshepa*, from the Jaina point of view That is a thing bears the name without having the qualities indicated by it It is merely a linguistic process for the convenience of argument and consideration In language it serves the same purpose as the symbolic letters used in Algebra

Name applied to something which does not possess the qualities connoted now It is *Sathapna* or *Dravya*

स्थापना निक्षेप *Sthapana Nikshepa* Attributed connotation as an actor playing a king or a warrior i e a thing bears a connotation which in reality it does not possess and can not possess

द्रव्य निक्षेप *Dravya Niksepa* taking the potential for the actual

In स्थापना *Sthapana* the connotation is merely attributed It is never there It cannot be there In द्रव्य *Dravya* it will be there or has been there The common factor between the two is that it is not there now and to that extent the connotation is fictitious in both

Name applied to a thing which does possess the qualities connoted now --

भावनिक्षेप *Bhava Nikshepa* The first three निक्षेप *Nikshepa*

standpoint The last भावनिक्षेप, *Bhava Nikshepa* is from the पर्यायार्थिकनय *paryayarthika Naya* modal standpoint

निक्षेप, *Nikshepa* is merely the way in which the word is used

This is most important in Jainism in view of the स्याद्वाद *Syadvada* system of Jain Logic A confusion in the निक्षेप, *Nikshepa*, would be a fruitful source of ambiguity and double meanings This सूत्र, *Sutra* lays down the necessary safeguard against this All the सप्ततत्त्व *seven tattvas* of सूत्र *Sutra* 4 supra can be considered in these 4 aspects e g —

I (i) जीव *Jiva* नामजीव *Nama Jiva* e g giving the name of जीव *Jiva* to objects which do not have all the attributes of *Jiva*, *Jiva* as a तत्त्व *tattva* i e in its reality has the four infinities of conation knowledge power and bliss

Mundane souls do not possess these but still we call them जीव *Jiva* A still clearer example will be to give a boat the name of Elizabeth (As in English a man may be called Mr Hill or Mr Fox)

(ii) स्थापना जीव *Sthapana Jiva* As the image of Lord Mahavira It is not महावीर, *Mahavira* the omniscient still we worship it as such As also a photo of a friend which is loved and respected as its original

(iii) द्रव्य जीव *Dravya Jiva*, as to call the अर्हत *Arahats* सिद्ध *Siddhas* An अर्हत *Arhat* soul is sure to become a Liberated Soul As a lecturer may be called a lecturer even when he is not lecturing, but is at his dinner

(iv) भाव जीव *Bhava Jiva* A human soul to be called a human soul only A mundane soul to be called a mundane soul only A Liberated soul only to be called a real ideal soul

II अजीव *Ajiva* Here consider पुद्गल *Pudgala* or matter subdivision of *Ajiva*

(i) नाम अजीव *Nama Ajiva* calling a man a block head or giving him the name of Hill Wood or Rice the names here are given merely as names, although the human being can never be mere dead inert-matter

(ii) स्थापना अजीव *Sthapana Ajiva* As a model of man of-war As representing an arch in a circus by human performers or representations of rivers and mountains on a level map

(iii) द्रव्य अजीव, *Dravya Ajiva* As calling a broken carriage a carriage when instead of carrying others it has to be carried itself

(iv) भाव आज्ञा *Bhava Ajna* Calling a ship a ship, and so on

III, आस्रव *Asrava* (i) नाम आस्रव, *Nama Asrava* as calling the सिद्ध, *Siddha*, महावीर *Mahavira* the remover of physical ills

Any such conscious removing of ill implies desire which means inflow of *karmic* matter into the soul In the Liberated state this is impossible therefore the आस्रव *Asrava* attributed is only in name.

(ii) स्थापना आस्रव *Sthapana Asrava* as attributing fearfulness to a black and hideous image or gentle kindness to the picture or statue of a philanthropist. Here the image or statue has no thought of frightening or pleasing us and therefore we simply attribute these आस्रव *Asrava* – inducing qualities to it

(iii) द्रव्य आस्रव *Dravya Asrava* As a man whom we have observed to be angry, is not so now and we still say — 'This is a wrathful man.

(iv) भाव आस्रव *Bhava Asrava* Speaking of the inflow only where it exists, e g, the inflow due to anger in an angry man.

IV (i) नाम बंध *Nama Bandha* बंध *Bandha* O God you smote my enemies Here the act of smiting implies desire and therefore bondage But a liberated soul can have nothing to do with it It is only attributed bondage

(ii) स्थापना बंध, *Sthapana Bandha* As a group of sculpture representing a butcher, slaughtering a cow or a hunter killing a she-deer Here the bondage due to the slaughtering and killing is represented by the sculpture.

(iii) द्रव्य बंध *Dravya Bandha* As a man who has worked away the bondage of karmic matter due to say an act of stealing and has become a pious man is called a thief as if the old bondage still clung to him

(iv) भावबंध, *Bhava Bhandha* Predication of bondage only where it exists. As a liar is bound by the matter due to the lie.

V संवर *Samvara*, (i) नाम संवर *Nama Samvara* As an angry but weak man, not returning the blow of his assailant walks away in silence To say that he has a very forgiving spirit, is *Nama Samvara*, because forgiveness implies the stoppage of the inflow of karmas due to anger and it is not present here

(ii) स्थापना संवर, *Sthapana Samvara* As in the figure or statue of a woman who looks the very picture of chastity Here the stoppage of the karmic inflow which unchastity would have caused is represented by

(iii) द्रव्य संवर *Dravya Samvara* As calling a तीर्थंकर *Tirthankara* before he has renounced the world, a वीतराग *Vitraga* or free from attachment is *Dravya Samvara* He is not a *Vitarga* yet, but is sure to become so

(iv) भाव संवर, *Bava Samvara* Speaking of संवर *Samvara*, as it really exists e g calling only that man वीतराग *Vitraga*, who has subdued all his passions

VI निर्जरा *Nirjara* (i) नाम निर्जरा, *Nama Nirjara* A man is seemingly engaged in austerities, but his thoughts wander out to worldly objects He is not really ridding his soul of matter If one who does not know this says that the man is getting rid of *karmas*, it would be *Nama Nirjara* i e, attributing *Nirjara* where it does not really exist

(ii) स्थापना निर्जरा *Sthapana Nirjara* e g, the representation of *Nirjara* by the contemplative posture of a saint in a picture or in an image

(iii) द्रव्य निर्जरा *Dravya Nirjara* As saying of a तीर्थंकर *Tirthankara* when he is still a house-holder, that he is born ascetic This is *Dravya Nirjara*, as the *Tirthankara* is sure to become an ascetic and get rid of karmic matter

(iv) भाव निर्जरा *Bhava Nujara*. Attributing *Nirjara* when the shedding of karmic matteris actually going on

VIII मोक्ष *Moksa* (i) नाममोक्ष *Nama Moksha* As a much harassed debtor on paying off his last debt may exclaim—

'This is my liberation This can not mean *Moksha* and yet word used connoted it. *Moksha* is claimed by one who has not got it This is only नाम मोक्ष *Nama Moksha*

(ii) स्थापना मोक्ष *Sthapana moksha* e g Liberation is represented by the figure of a सिद्ध *Siddha* This figure is an image of brilliance, as the Liberated Soul are described to be in सिद्धक्षेत्र, *Sidha Khsetra*, the half-moon shaped space at the summit of the Universe which is the abode of *Siddhas*

(iii) द्रव्य मोक्ष *Dravya Moksha* To call the *Arhats*, *Siddhas* *Arhats* are sure to become *Siddhas*, but as *Arhats* they are not *Siddhas*

(iv) भाव मोक्ष *Bhava Moksha* Attributing *Moksha* only to Liberated Souls



SUTARA 6

प्रमाण नयैरधिगम (६)

Pramana Nayairadhi gamah--(6)

अधिगम *Adhigama* is knowledge that is derived from tuition external sources e.g precept and scriptures It is attained by (means of) *Pramana* and *Naya*

प्रमाण *Pramana* Authority by means of which we test direct or indirect right knowledge of the self and the non self in all their aspects

नय *Naya* a stand-point which gives partial knowledge of a thing in some particular aspect of it

Note—Right belief is not identical with faith Its authority is neither external nor autocratic It is reasoned knowledge It is a sort of a sight of a thing You cannot doubt its testimony So long as there is doubt; there is no right belief But doubt must not be suppressed It must de destroyed Things have not to be taken on trust. They must be tested and tried by every one on self This सूत्र *Sutra* lays down the mode in which it can be done It refers the enquirer to the first laws of thought and to the universal principles of all reasoning that is to logic under the names of प्रमाण *Praman* and नय *Naya*

प्रमाण *Pramana* is authority It is —
(i) प्रत्यक्ष *Pratyaksha* i e direct self evident
Like —अवधि *Avadhi* Visual
मन पर्यय *Manapraryaya* Metal and
केवल *Kevala* Perfect knowledge
(ii) परोक्ष *Paroksha* Mediate indirect

Like —मति *Mati* Sensitive and
श्रुति *Shruti* Scriptural knowledge.
नय *Naya* is stand point It is —
(1) द्रव्यार्थिक *Dravyarthika* Substantial or
(2) पर्यायार्थिक *Paryayarthika* Modal ?

The most prominent use of stand-[illegible] *Syadvada* or सप्तभंगीनय *Sapta-bhangi Naya* [illegible] view of speech of seven kinds —

From some point of view a [illegible] unpredicable, and again is and is [illegible] able, is and is not and is unpre[illegible] —

(1) स्यात अस्ति *Syat Asti* i e from the point of view of its own is own subject matter place time and nature the substance is i e. exists as itself.

(2) स्यात् नास्ति *Syat Nasti* i e from the point of view of the subject matter, place time and nature of non-substance it is not i e. it is not non-substance

(3) स्यात् अस्ति नास्ति *Syat Asti Nasti*, i e from the point of view of the same quarternary relating to itself and non substance it may be said that substance is and is not if we make the statement successively

(4) स्यात् अवक्तव्य *Syat Avaktva* i e if statement under *Syat Asti Nasti* are attempted to be made of once it can not be done Thus a a substance is unpredicable.

(5) स्यात अस्ति अवक्तव्य *Syat Asti Avaktavya* i e from the point of view of its own quaternary and at the same time from the joint quarternary of itself and non substance, substance is and is also unpredicaple

(6) स्यात् नास्ति अवक्तव्य *Syat Nasti Avaktavya*, i e From the point of view of non-substance quaternary and at the same time from the joint quarternaty of itself and non substance substance is not and is unpredicable

(7) स्यात् अस्ति नास्ति अवक्तव्य *Syat Asti Nasti Avaktva*, i e from the point of view of its own quaternary and non substance quaternary and at the same time from the joint quaternary of itself and non-substance substance is and is not and is unpredicable

(See *Panchastikaya Gatha 14*)

There are the Universal instruments for acquiring all kinds of knowledge.

But there are particular ways in which they can be usefully applied to right belief Those ways are given in *Sutra* 7th and 8th

Sutra 6th gives the means of acquiring अधिगम *Adhigama*
Sutras 7th and 8th give the modes of employing those means

SUTRA 7

निर्देश स्वामित्व साधनाऽधिकरण स्थिति विधानत: ॥७॥

Nirdesa svamitva Sadhanadhi karana sthiti vidhanatah

Adhigama is attaind by (considering a Principle or any substance with reference to its निर्देश *Nirdesh* (Description Definition) स्वामित्व *Svamitva* (Possession Inherence साधन *Sadhan* (cause) अधिकरण *Adhikarana* (Place) स्थिति *Sthiti* (Duration) and विधान *Vidhana* (Division)

Everything can be known by being treated in these six ways e g man He may be described as a rational animal the qualities of rationality and animality inhere in all human beings the cause of being a man is the sum total of his own karmic energies which acting through his parents caused him to be born in the world his birth depends on his birth place being such as human beings can be born in it his duration i e his life is determined and limited by his age or आयुकर्म *Ayu karma* and according to his nationality he may be divided into English French German American Japanese etc, etc.

We shall subject right belief to this six fold treatment.

निर्देश *Nirdesha* Right belief is belief in things, ascertained as they are

स्वामित्व *Svamitva* Generally it inheres in souls which are capable of attaining liberation and only in those who have got a mind i.e. are समनस्क *Samanaska*.

साधन *Sadhan* Cause of right belief i. e.—

(1) अभ्यन्तर *Abhyantara* internal It is the making inoperative of the दर्शन मोहनीय *Darshana Mohaniya* or the belief obscuring karma and *Anantanubandhi Kashaya* the 4 over feeding passions

(2) बाह्य *Bahyya* external This is of two kinds —

(i) निसर्गज *Nisargaja* intutive e g remembrance of past lives enduring of great pain contemplation of the image of the Lord Jinas or *Tirthankaras* and observation of the miraculous powers of the celestial beings

(ii) अधिगमज *Adhigamaja* acquired, e g by other people or the scriptures

अधिकरण *Adhikarana* is also —

(1) अभ्यन्तर *Internal* It is the soul itself upon which right belief depends.

(2) बाह्य External It's त्रसनाडी *Trasa Nadi*, mobile channel, i e that part of the Universe out side of which living beings with only one sense are found.

स्थिति *Sthiti* The smallest duration of right belief is one जघन्य अन्तर्मुहूर्त *Jaghanya Antarmuharta* i e minimum, which consist of one आवली *Avali* and one समय *Sanyam* instant One *Avali* is the twinkling of an eye In one *Avali* there are *Jaghanya yukta asamkhyta*, or minimum plenteous innumerable *Sanyam* A समय *Sanyam* is an instant or unit of time i e the time by an atom of matter in passing from one प्रदेश *Pradesha*, ie, from one point of space to the next उत्कृष्ट अन्तर्मुहूर्त *Utkrishta* or maximum *Antar muhurta* is equal to 48 minutes one *Sanayam* The longest duration of right belief is enternity, e g the right belief of liberated souls

विधान *Vidhana* There are three main divisions —

(1) औपशमिक *Aupashamika* arises when the right belief deluding *karmas* and the four अनन्तानुबन्धी कषाय *Anantanubandhi Kashaya*, i e, anger pride, deciet and greed which feed these karmas are made inoperative

(2) क्षायोपशमिक *Kshayopashamika*, arises when there is part destruction subsidence and operation of the right-belief deluding *karmas* and of the error-feeding passions

(3) क्षायिक *Kshayak* arises from a total destruction of the above This belief last for ever

In a similar six fold way the other principles जीव *Jiva* अजीव *Ajiva* etc must be treated

SUTRA 8

सत्संख्या क्षेत्र स्पर्शन कालान्तर भावाल्प बहुत्वैश्च ॥८॥

Sat Samkhya Ksetra Sparsana Kalantra Bhavalpa Bahutvaishch

(The eight principles are known) also by—

(1) सत् *Sat* Existence

(2) संख्या *Samkhya* number, enumeration of kinds or classes

(3) क्षेत्र *Kshetra* place where the thing is found at the present time

(4) स्पर्शन *Sparshana* Extent or the amount of space touched by it in all ages

(5) काल *Kala* Time

(6) अन्तर *Antara* Interval (of Time)

(7) भाव *Bhava* Quality i e that determinateness which is one with the being of the object

(8) अल्पबहुत्व *Alpa bahutva* Quantity, the being so much with reference to a possible more or less, measurable or numetable amount

By these 8 ways जीव *Jiva* etc can be known even more fully than by the 6 ways given above e g जीव *Jiva* —

सत् *Sat Jiva* exists. This is inferred from the fact of consciousness which is a characteristic of soul, and not found in any other substance. This consciousness persists in the soul in all its conditions of existance

संख्या *Samkhya* There is an infinity of souls This is obvious from the infinite forms of embodied souls.

क्षेत्र *Kshetra*. Soul is found in the whole Universe.

स्पर्शन *Sparshana* At some time or other the soul touch the whole Universe

काल *Kala*. The duration of soul is enternity

अन्तर *Antara*. This means the interval between a condition of soul and its regaining that condition once more after losing it For Example a soul is embodied as a man then he transmigrates to other forms of existance and then once more is embodied as a man, the interval between the two human embodiments is called अन्तर *Antara*

भाव *Bhava* The soul has five kinds of vibrations e g, औदयिक *Audayika* i e the vibrations set up in a soul by the coming into operation of the karmic matter

अल्प बहुत्व *Alpa bahutva* This is naturally compartive There are more souls embodied as vegetable souls than air souls and more as air souls than water, and more as water souls than earth souls and more as earth souls than fire souls

Now take the case of Liberated souls

सत् *Sat* Existence Is permanent in substance i e in *Jiva* but there is natural brought-activity which owing to time may be said to be different or distinct for each passing moment The test of सत् *Sat* is the inherence in the object considered of the threefold qualities of Birth Decay and Permanence Birth and Decay both refer to the coming in to and going out of existence of condition The substance of course continues the same

संख्या *Samkhya* Number Infinite

क्षेत्र *Kshetra* Place At the end of Loka

स्पर्शन *Sparshana* Possible extent (Orbit) From the place of the soul attaining liberation to the end of *Loka* Any point 2½ *dvipas* may be beginning because the liberated soul attains *Siddhahood* there, and then its only natural and final movement is vertical and only up to the end of *Loka*

काल *Kala* Time (Real) The liberated soul takes one *samaya* to reach the end of Loka It retains Siddhahood for an Infinite time

अन्तर *Antara* Interval of time Between one soul attaining liberation and another, there may be an interval of one *Samyam* and at the most of 6 months. As to space every liberated soul has a form and it is distinct from that of the other liberated souls But form is not necessarily an attribute of matter It is the quality which makes a substance occupy space which is called its pure form It should be remembered that matter is not the only substance according to *Jainism* There are five others, one is space Space gives place to everything else

भाव *Bhava* Quality It's own पारिणामिक *Parinamika* activity is soul's own quality It's possession of the infinities of conation knowledge power and bliss is its quality from another point of view, i e the absence of *Karmas* which obscure these

अल्प बहुत्व *Alpa-bahutva* Quantity The size of it s form depends upon the size of the body of its last mundane incarnation It is noticeable that Existence and number are really variants of द्रव्य *Dravya* Substance

Place and Possible Extent really variants of क्षेत्र *Kshetra* Place

Time and Interval really variants of काल *Kala* Time and Quality and Quantity really variants of भाव *Bhava* Quality

SUTRA 9

मतिश्रुतावधिमनःपर्ययकेवलानिज्ञानम् ॥९॥

Mati Shrutavadhi Manah paryaya Kevalani Jnanam

Right knowledge (is of five kinds)

मति *Mati* Sensitive knowledge Knowledge of the self and the non-self by means of the senses and the mind

श्रुत *Shruta* Scriptural knowledge Knowledge derived from the reading or preaching of scriptures or through an object known by sensitive knowledge

अवधि *Avadhi* Visual knowledge Direct knowledge of matter in various degree with reference to द्रव्य *Dravya* subject matter क्षेत्र *Kshetra* space, काल *Kala* time and भाव *Bhava* quality of the object known.

मनःपर्यय *Manah paryay* Mental knowledge Direct knowledge of another's mental activity about matter

केवल *Kevala*. Perfect knowledge. Omniscence knowledge of all things in all their aspects at all times

Each of these five kinds of knowledge can be considered in its aspect of the knower the knowledge and the means of knowing so far as the soul is concerned. The outward substances which are known are not included in this.

श्रुत *Shruta* or scriptural knowledge is also called —
आप्त वचन *Apta Vachana*
आगम *Agama*
उपदेश *Upadesh*
ऐतिह्य *Aitihaba*
आम्नाय *Amnaya*
प्रवचन *Pravachan*
जिन वचन *Jina Vachan*

SUTRA 10

तत् प्रमाणे ॥१०॥

Tat pramane

They (i e., five kinds of knowledge are) the two *Pramanas* (and no others)

The *Pramanas* are of two kinds —

प्रत्यक्ष *Pratyaksha* Direct. This is Visual (अवधि) Mental (मनःपर्यय) and Perfect (केवल) knowledge

परोक्ष *Paroksha*, Indirect This is Sensitive (मति) and श्रुत Scriptural knowledge.

But other systems of Philosophy believe in the following Pramanas —

चार्वाक *Charvaka* believes in प्रत्यक्ष *Pratyaksa* (Perception) only

बुद्ध वैशेषिक *Baddha* and *Vaisesika* believe in Perception and अनुमान *Anumana* (Inference)

सांख्य *Sambhya*, believes in Perception, Inference and आगम *Agamá* (Trustworthy affirmation)

नैयायिक *Naiyayika* believes in Perception Inference Trustworthy affirmation and उपमान *Upamana* (comparison)

मीमांसक *Mimansaka* believes in Perception, Inference Trustworthy affirmation, comparison अर्थापत्ति *Arthapatti* (Presumption) and अभाव *Abhava* (Privation)

SUTRA 11

आद्ये परोक्षम् ॥११॥

Adyeo Paroksham

The first two kinds of knowledge, i e, मति *Sensitive* and श्रुत *Scriptural* knowledge, are परोक्ष *Paroksha* i e Indirect or Mediate

Indirect is so called as it is acquired by the external help of the senses (including the mind) or the Scriptures or by the internal help i e by the partial subsidence, destruction and operation क्षयोपशम *Kshyopsham* of the knowledge-observing *karma*

SUTRA 12

प्रत्यक्षमन्यत् १२

Pratyaksha Manyat

The remaining three i e अवधि *Avadhi* visual, direct material knowledge मनःपर्यय *Manah paryaya* Mental direct mental knowledge and केवल *Kevala* Perfect knowledge are प्रत्यक्ष *Pratyaksha*, i e directly known by the soul itself without any external help

Of these the Visual and Mental arise on the क्षयोपशम *Kshayopashama* destruction subsidence of knowledge-obscuring *karmas* They are called देश प्रत्यक्ष *Deshapratyaksha*, Incomplete direct knowledge केवल *Kevala* arises from total destruction of knowledge-obscuring *karms* This done is सकल प्रत्यक्ष *Sakala Pratyaksha* or complete direct knowledge

SUTRA 13

मतिस्मृति सञ्ज्ञाचिन्ताऽभिनिबोधइत्यनर्थान्तरम् ॥१३॥

Matih Smriti Sanjna Chinta Bhinibodha Ityanarthantaram

मति *Mati* sensitive knowledge (connotes) the same things as

स्मृति *Smriti* (rememberance of a thing known before but out of sight now);

संज्ञा *Sanjna* also called प्रत्यभिज्ञान *Pratibhijnana* recognition (rememberance of a thing known before when the thing itself or something similar or markedly dissimilar to it, is present to the senses now); चिन्ता *Chinta* or तर्क *Tarka* Induction (reasoning or argument based upon observation If a thing is put in fire its temperature would rise);

अभिनिबोध *Sabhinibodh* or *Anumana* (Deduction Reasoning by inference; e g any thing put in fire becomes heated, this thing is in *fire; therefore it must be heated)*

Each of the last four is based upon the one preceding it e g rememberance is based on sensitive knowledge We remember John, because we have seen him before We recognise his picture because we remember him and his picture is before us This संज्ञा *Sanjna* or recognition is based upon our rememberance स्मृति *Smriti* of John which is itself based upon our मति *Mati* sense knowledge of John when we saw him as also upon our sense knowleege of the picture before us

Induction (*Chinta*) is based upon recognition. We see the sun rise in the same way every day We see men dying The same or similar phenomena take place We remember and recognise these phenomons By induction we say the sun rises always and all men die Having stered up our observations in the above induction we can make use of them in deduction or *Anumana* and argue

The sun rises every day therefore it will rise to-morrow All men die therefore John will die

These five are called मति *Mati* and they arise on the *Kshayopashama*, destruction-subsidence or the subsidence, destruction and operation of the Sensitive-knowledge obscuring *karmas*



SUTRA 14

तदिन्द्रियानिन्द्रियनिमित्त ॥१४॥

Tadindriya nindriya nimittam

It is acquired by the help of the इंद्रिय *Indriya*, senses and अनिन्द्रिय *anindriya*, i. e, mind.

इंद्रिय *Indriya* is so called because *Indriya* means the soul and the sense-organs are an index or sign of that soul

अनिन्द्रिय *Anindriya* or अन्त करण *Antah karana*, mind is so called to distinguish it internal character from the external senses It is also called नोइन्द्रिय *No-Indriya*, or quasi-sense

In Jainism it is an organ which is made of subtle matter called मनोवर्गणा *Manovargana* or mental matter Its form is like a lotus with eight petals near the heart

SUTRA 15

अवग्रहेहावायधारणा

Avagraho havaya dharnah

They are

अवग्रह *Avagraha.* It is preceded by दर्शन, *Darshana* or conation, tendency towards an object. Conation is the consciousness which arises at the moment when the senses are merely awakened towards the object but before they gain even the slightest describable perception of its sensible qualities. *Avagraha* or perception is the definite or indefinite but distinct apprehension of the object, e g seeing a white object in the distance we know that it is white but do not know whether it is a man or a pillar etc. It is also called, ग्रहण *Grahana*, आलोचन *Alochana* or अवधारण *Avadharana*

ईहा *Iha* Conception. Here we deal with the contents of perception and picking out separate qualities from the continuous whole which we perceive group them together It is the under-mined but definite knowledge that the thing must be this or that It is accompanied with a desire to ascertain what it really is e g to argue that the while object must be a pillar This knowledge is the nearest to the next kind, i. e ; Juedgment It is also called ऊहा *Uha* तर्क *Tarka*, परिक्षा *Pariksha*, विचारणा *Vicharna* or जिज्ञासा *Jijnasa*

आवाय *Avaya* Judgement It is ascertained knowledge e g that the white object is a pillar and not a man. It is also called अपाय *Apaya* अपगम *Apagama* अपनोद *Apanoda* अपव्याध *Apavyadha* अपेत *Apeta* अपगत *Apagata* अपविद्ध *Apaviddha* or अपनुत्त *Apanutta*

धारणा *Dharana* Retention. Keeping things in the mind Memory of Judgements Firm and indelible grasp of the knowledge of the *Avaya* or ascertained kind. It is also called प्रतिपत्ति *Pratipatti* अवधारणा *Avadharana* अवस्थान *Avasthana* निश्चय *Nischaya*, अवगम *Avagama* or अवबोध *Avabodha*

SUTRA 16

बहु बहुविध क्षिप्राऽनि सृताऽनुक्तध्रुवाणां सेतराणाम ॥ १६ ॥

Bahu bahuvidha kshipra nisrita nukta dhruvanam setaranam

Of many, many kinds quick hidden unexpressed lasting and their opposites

Eacj pme pfetje fpır lomds om Sutra 15 has twelve subdivision i e each one can relate to twelve kinds of considerations These 12 are —

बहु *Bahu* More Many in number or much in quantity as perception of a crowd of people or a huge stack of hay

एक *Eka* अल्प *Alpa* one in number or unit or quantity as perception of one man or of a glass of water

बहुविध *Bahuvidha* of many kinds as perception of a man with a dog i e of two kinds of object perceived

एकविध *Ekavidha*; of one kind; as perception of a flock of sheep

क्षिप्र *Kshipra*, quick e g perception of an Express going full speed

अक्षिप्र *Akshipra* Slow; as perception of a snail crawling by

अनिसृत *Anisrita* Hidden; perception of a ship from seeing only its funnel above the horizon

निसृत *Nisrita* Exposed perception of an open thing like a book on a table

अनुक्त *Anukta* Unexpressed; not described perception of thing which has not been described to us as that of an animal not known.

उक्त *Ukta* Described; perception of what has been described e g perception of a horse or cow, described in a book

ध्रुव *Dhruva* Lasting, perception of a mountain

अध्रुव *Adhruva*, Transient, perception of a flash of lightning

As perception or *Avagraha* is illustrated above so *Iha, Avaya* and *Dharama* have to be treated Thus we obtain $12 \times 4 = 48$ divisions of senses knowledge through any one of the senses. As there are five senses and one mind the total kinds of sense-knowledge are —

$$48 \times (5+1) = 48 \times 6 = 288$$

SUTRA 17

अर्थस्य ॥१७॥

Arthasya

The 288 refer to, i e are of determinable sense objects, (i e thing that can be touched, tasted smelt, seen, heard or perceived by the mind)

The 288 sub divisions of knowledge relates to determinable sense objects

SUTRA 18

व्यञ्जनस्यावग्रहः ॥ १८ ॥

Vyanjanasya Vagrahah

There is only perception *Avagraha* of *Vyanjana* i e indeterminable object (i e of a thing of which we know very little so little that we can not proceed to the *Iha* Conception *Avaya* Judgement and *Dharana* Retention of it)

It can be only the subject-matter of four senses namaly touch, taste smell and hearing It can not be the subject matter of sight and mind which can acquire further knowledge of anything before them, e g we hear a sound but it is so slight and sudden that although we are sure that there was a sound we can not determine its character or origin

Thus there is no *Iha* conception *Avaya* Judgement or *Dharma* Retention of *Vyanjana* an indeterminable object But if the object becomes knowable as e g the sound in the last illustration by repetition then the perception of it may become अर्थावग्रह *Arthavagraha* i e perception of a पदार्थ *Padartha* or determinable sense-object as distinguished from व्यञ्जनावग्रह *Vyanjanavagraha* perception of व्यञ्जन *Vyanjana* or an indeterminable sense object.

SUTRA 19

न चक्षुर निद्रियाभ्याम् ॥ १६ ।

Na Chakshu ranindriya bhyam

This is not possible to the eye or the mind (It is possible to the remaining four senses.)

Thus the kinds of perception of indeterminable objects are 48 i e the 4 senses can each know as indeterminable thing in its 12 aspects of *Bahu*, etc

Thus the total number of kinds of sensitive knowledge is 288+48=336

SUTRA 20

श्रुतमति पूर्वंद्वनेके द्वादश भेदम् ॥ २० ॥

Shrutam matipurvam dvyaneka dvadasha bhedam

Shruta or Scriptural knowledge is always preceded by sensitive knowledge It is of two kinds one of which has twelve and the other many divisions

A man hears the word Ship this is sensitive-knowledge

The sound raises the qualities of a Ship in his mind as he may have read or heard of them this is Scriptural knowledge

It is of two kinds अग प्रविष्ठ *Anga-pravishta* contained in the *Angas* There are 12 *Angas*

Angas-Vahya out of the *Angas* These non *Anga* Scriptures are of many kinds

Shruta literally means that which is heard (*Sri* to hear) Scriptural knowledge is of two kinds

(1) Verbal lettered (अक्षरात्मक *Aksharatmaka*)

(2) Non verbal letterless (अनक्षरात्मक *Anaksharatmaka*)

Verbal scriptural knowledge is derived from words which are composed of letters (अक्षर *Akshara*) spoken or written; as when the eye sees the written word or the ear hears the Spoken word soul The seeing and hearing gives us merely sensitive knowledge (*Mati jnana*) What more we think about the meaning and connotation of the word soul is scriptural knowledge It is called verbal because it is derived from our sensitive knowledge of the word 'soul

Non-verbal scriptural knowledge is derived from all kinds of sensitive knowledge except those kinds which can be reduced to words written or spoken You feel cold air, the knowledge of coldness is sensitive knowledge by means of touch of the skin If you do not like it and infer that it is unpleasant, it is non-verbal scriptural knowledge It is derived from your knowledge or feeling of cold, which cannot be reduced to a mere word written or spoken

Verbal scriptural knowledge is possible only in rational beings All the irrationals have only non-verbal scriptural knowledge. Their sensitive knowledge also is confined to perception (*Avagraha*) by all the 5 senses except the eye

The rationals have non-verbal scriptural knowledge also

Verbal scriptural knowledgo is also called *Shabdajnana or Shabdaja* produced by words Non-verbal scriptural knowledge is also called *Lingajamya* or *Lingaja* produced by signs (*Gommatasara, Jiva Kanda Gatha* 314)

THE ANICENT JAINA SACRED LITE RATURE

The knowledge of a *Shruta* (श्रुतज्ञान) may be of things which are contained in the *Angas* (Sacred books of the Jainas) or of things outside the *Angas* There are 64 root letters of the alphabet or representations of sounds. Of these 33 are consonats 27 vowel (e i slight, long and prolonged 3 kinds of each of the 6 vowels and mixed Sounds *anusvara visarga kh hkh hp hph*) which help in the formation of Compound letters) The total number of possible combinations of these 64 simple letters into Compound of 2,3 4, or more upto are the letters (Simple and Compound) of Shruta in its entirety This letters in a middle foot (परमागम) of the *Paramagama* gives us the number of *reet Padas* 9 of the *Angas* as 11, 28, 35 80, 500 The remaineder 8 10 80 175 gives us the letters of that part of *Shruta* which is not contained in the *angas* This part is divided into 14 *Prakirnaka*, such as *Dasa Vaikalika Uttaradhayan* &. c

SUTRA 21

भावप्रत्ययोऽवधिदेवनारकानाम् ॥२१॥

Bhava pratyayoavadhir deva narakanam

Birth-born visual knowledge (is in born) in celestial and hellish beings

---

The Dravyas are 6; जीव, पुद्गल धर्म, अधर्म, आकाश और काल

Celestial and hellish beings have visual knowledge by birth and they have it till death just as human beings have sensitive and scriptural knowledge. Celestial and hellish beings have sensitive and scriptural knowledge also

SUTRA 22

क्षयोपशम निमित्त षडविकल्प शेषाणाम् ॥२२॥

Kshayopashama nimittah Shad vikalpah Sheshnam

(The other kind of Visual or direct material knowledge is) of six kinds (and it) arises from the part destruction part subsidence and part operation (of the *Karmas* which obscure Visual or direct material knowledge) (This is acquired by the others i e by human and sub-human beings who are possessed of mind)

This is called गुणप्रत्यय *Guna-pratyaya* or acquired by merit as distinguished from in born Visual knowledge

Its 6 kinds are —

अनुगामि *Anugami* Accompanying Visual knowledge That which goes with one to another place or even another incarnation

अननुगामि *Ananugami* Non Accompanying Visual knowledge That which *does not go with one but is lost*

वर्द्धमान *Varddhamana* Increasing That which goes on increasing

हीयमान *Hiyamana* Decreasing That which goes on decreasing

अवस्थित *Avasthita* Steadfast That which retains the extent which it had when it arose

अनवस्थित *Anavasthita* Changeable That which increases sometimes and decreases on others

These 6 kinds are due to the greater or less purity and intensity of right belief, etc

Visual knowledge is also of 3 kinds —

(1) देशावधि *Desha Avadhi* Partial Visual knowledge This alone is *Anavasthita* changeable

(2) परमावधि *Parama Avadhi* High visual knowledge

(3) सर्वावधि *Sarva Avadhi* Full Visual knowledge

These two extend upto Perfect knowledge They are never *Ananugami* non-accompaning nor-*Hiyamana* decreasing

Partial Visual knowledge is fallible the remaining two are infallible In these two there is no wrong belief or vowlessness (c p *Gommatasara Jiva Kanda, Gatha* 374)

SUTRA 23

ऋजुविपुलमतिमन पर्याय ॥२३॥

Riju Vipulamati manah Paryayah

Mental knowledge (is of two kinds) —

ऋजुमति *Rijumati* Simple direct knowledge of complex mental things e g of what a man is thinking of now along with what he has thought of it in the past and will think of it

The thoughts which can be directly known by mental knowledge must relate to matter Simple mental knowledge is of 3 kinds according as the subject of it is the matter and form of thought about the simple activity of body mind and speech which has been thought of in the mind of another (see J K 138) It knows the material objects of all the three times past present and future thought of by any soul in the present Complex mental knowledge knows what has been thought of in the past and will be thought of in the future (J K 10) It is of 6 kinds as it knows matter and form of thought about simple and complex activity of body mind and speech thought of by another (J K 439)

SUTRA 24

विशुद्ध प्रति पाताभ्याम् तत्विवेश ॥२४॥

Vishuddha Prati patabhyam tadvisheshah

Their differences (are as to) purity (and) infallibility

SUTRA 25

विशुद्ध क्षेत्रस्वामि स्वामि विषयोऽभ्या वधि मन पर्याय ॥२५॥

Vishuddh Kshetra swami vishayobhyam vadhi manah paryayah

Between Visual and Mental knowledge the diffrences relate to their purity, place person of inherence and subject-matter

SUTRA 26

मति श्रुतयोर्निबधो द्रव्यस्य सर्व पर्यायस्व ॥२६॥

Mati shrutyo nirbandho dravyasya Sarva paryaysva

The subject-matter of Sensitive and Scriptural knowledge is all the six substances but not in all their modifications

SUTRA 27

रूपिश्वा वधे ॥२७॥

Rupishva yadheh

Matter (and embodied soul are the subject matter) of Visual (knowledge but not in all their modifications)

SUTRA 28

तदनन्त भाजा मन पर्ययस्य ॥२८॥

Tadananta bhaja manah paryayasya

The infinitesimal part or the subtlest form of that (which can be known by the highest visual knowledge is the subject matter) of mental (knowledge)

Sarva avadhi or full visual knowledge knows one atom

Riju mati simple mental knowledge knows an infinitesimal part of an atom i e an infinitesimal degree of its attributes This degree is called *Avibhaga practichcheda* or an infinitesimal part of its constituents Complex mental knowledge (विपुल मति *Vipula mati*) knows an infinitesimal part of the subject matter of simple mental knowledge. (See also Chapter V Sutra 10)

SUTRA 29

सर्व द्रव्य पर्यायेषु केवलस्य ॥२९॥

Sarva dravya paryayesu kevalashya

(The subject matter) of perfect knowledge (is) all the substances (and all their) modifications

SUTRA 30

एक दीनि भाजानि युगपदेकस्मिन्न चतुर्भ्य ॥३०॥

Ekadini bhajani yugapade kasminna Chatubhyah

Beginning from the first onwards in one (should) at a time as to their distribution (there can be found) upto four (kinds of knowledge

All mundane souls except the omniscient always have at least two, i e, sensitive and scriptural knowledge.

SUTRA 31

मति श्रुतास्वधयो विपर्ययश्च ॥३१॥

Mati Shruta vadhayo viparyayascha

And Sensitive (*Mati*) scriptural (*Shruta* and) Visual (*avadhi*) (knowledge are also) wrong (knowledge)

It is called wrong because unless there is right belief, knowledge cannot be called right It is characterised by —

Sanshaya doubt (This is formed in sensitive and Scriptural, but never in Visual knowledge

Viparyaya perversity mistake opposite of truth, (this is found in Visual knowledge also) and *Anadhyavasya* wrong knowledge caused by carelessness indifference or confusion



SUTRA 32

सदसतोरविशेषाद्यदृच्छोपलब्धेरुन्मत्तवत ॥ ३२ ॥

Sadasato ravisesadya drichhopa labdhe runmattavat

From lack of discrimination of the real and the unreal (the soul with wrong knowledge) like a lunatic knows things according to his own whims.

Wrong knowledge may be —

(1) कारण विपर्यय *Karana viparyaya* mistaking the cause of a thing as that the passions are primarily caused by matter, whereas they are the thought activity of the soul of which Karmas are an auxiliary cause

(2) भेदाभेद विपर्यय *Bheda bheda viparyaya* perverse confusion of cause and effect mistaking the true relation of cause and effect holding separation in identical and identity in really seperate things as holding that attributes and their substances are separate and

(3) स्वरूप विपर्यय *Swarupa viparyaya* mistake in the nature or character of a thing As idealists believing that form and colour are nothing they exist only in knowledge

विपर्यय *Viparyaya* is also of 2 kinds

(1) सहज *Sahaja* mistake arising by one's own self without any preaching of another

All are Sahaja except the next

(2) आहार्य *Aharya* mistake due to another's preaching; this is wrong scriptural knowledge caused by negative knowledge through the ears

So much for Pramana

SUTRA 33

नैगमसंग्रहव्यवहारर्जुसूत्रशब्दसमभिरूढैवंभूता नयाः ॥ ३३ ॥

Naigama Sangraha Vyavahararıju Sutra sabda Samabhirudhai Vambhuta nayah

The points of view (are) Figurative, general distributive actual descriptive, specific, active

Note 1 *Dravyarthika* or *Samanya*, substantial, *Utsarga Anuyvritti* relating to the substance Its sub kinds are -

1 *Naigama* Figurative, Not literal Taking something for granted Speaking of a past or future event as a present one Speaking of a thing in hand as a completed fact. It is of 3 kinds relating to past present and future e g, saying on Divali day "Lord Mahavira attained liberation to-day' The present is used figuratively of the past Similarly for future or present A man is going to book his passage to Australia and being asked where he is going, he says To Australia or when the cook is lighting fire and some one asks her what she is doing she may answer I am cooking", although she is only preparing to cook.

2 *Sangraha* General or Common A class as a whole. A class of things; denoted by the same word As *Dravya* applied to six *dravyas*; man; tiger etc

3 *Vyavahara* Distributive To divide or separate a general term into its classes orders kinds and species *Dravya* 'is distributed into six *dravyas*; souls into mundane and liberated

Note II. *Paryayartnika* or *Visesa Apavada Vyavritti* Model relating to the modification of substances This is

4 *Riju Sutra* i e, the actual condition at (1) A particular instant and (2) for a long time. They are called *sukshma* fine and *sthula* gross respectively, e g a soul with a good thought for an instant or a man with human condition for a life time

5 *Sabda* Descriptive This includes grammatical correctness and propriety of expression From this point of view we can use the present for the past tense plural for the singular number feminine for the masculine gender etc At the use of the present tense in describing the events which happened in the past e g In 1066 A. D We see the Normans attack the Anglo Saxons or conquer their country or the common use of 'you' for one man; or a boat which is generally called 'she" to be named, Lord Nelson or

which succeeded another modification It is *Paryaya* proper

Note VI Each of the seven stand points has a greater extent or denotation than the one which follows it *Naigama* has thus the greatest and *Ebambhuta* the least extent *Naigama* deals with real and unreal *Sangraha* with real only *Vyavahara* only with a part of the real *Riju Sutra* with only the present condition of a part of the real *Sabda* with only the expression of the real *Samabhirudha* with only that particular expression which applies to the thing in its present activity

Note also that each of the seven *nayas* is dependent on the one preceding it

The Principle stand points are 7 But in practice, the stand points can obviously be many more according to the point of view from which the things considered or spoken of

The other systems of philosophy recognise the following topics

(1) *Bauddhas* They recognise the 5 *Skandhas* (*Khandhas*) or Aggregates or groups
Vijnana Consciousness
Vedana Feeling
Sanjna Perception recognising and naming
Sanskara (*Sankhara*) 50 other mental accompaniment specially will that arise when consciousness is submitted.
Rupa Material or body

(2) *Naiyayikas* 16 *Padarthas* namely *Pramana* *Prameya* *Sansya* Doubt *Prayojana* *Dristanta* *Sidhanta* *Avayava* *Tarka* *Nirnaya* *Vada* *Jalpa* *Vitanda* *Hetvabhasa* *Chhala* *Jati* *Nigrahasthana*

(3) *Vaisesika* *7 Padarthas namely* *Dravya* *Guna* *Karma* *Samamya* *Visesa* *Samavaya* *Abhava*

(4) *Samkha* 25 *Tatvas namely* *Prakriti* *Pradhana* *Ahamkara* *Karamendriya*
5 *Jhana endriya*
5 *Mana*
Tanmatras (*Sabda* *Sparsha* *rupa* *rasa* *gandha*)
5 *Bhutas* (Earth water fire air space) *Purusa* *Nirvikara* self, pure and perfect soul

दूसरा अध्याय

CHAPTER II

SUTRA 1.

औपशमिकक्षायिकौ भावौ मिश्रश्च जीवस्य
स्वतत्त्वमौदयिक पारिणामिकौ च ॥

Aupashamikakshayikau bhavau mishrascha jivasya
svattatvamaudayika parinamikau cha.

The soul's own thatness i. e thought activity (is of five kinds)

(1) औपशमिक *Aupashamika* Subsidential (That which rises from the subsidence of a *Karma* of the deluding kind)

(2) क्षायिक *Kshayika*, destructive, Purified (That which rises from the destruction of *Karma's* e.g. the 4 घातिया *Ghatiya*, destructive *Karma's*)

(3) मिश्र *Mishra* Mixed (i e, क्षायोपशमिक *Kshayopasamika* destructive subsidential, that which rises from the partial destruction subsidence and operation of destructive *Karmas*)

(4) औदयिक *Audayika* operative (that which rises from the operation i. e., fruition of *Karmas*

(5) पारिणामिक *Parinamika* Natural (The soul's own natural thought-activity, independent of *Karmas*)

The first four of these thought nature have reference to their various causes

The 5th is the own pure nature of the soul which is always there but in an impure condition, because of its being in conjunction and co-existence with three other thought-natures viz those due to the subsidence (aupashamika) destruction subsidence and operation (Kshayopashamika) or to the operation of *Karmas* (Audayika)

Here it is necessary to understand the distinction between 8 kinds of *Karmas*

There are 2 main classes.

(1) घातिया *Ghatiya* or Destructive *Karmas* which attach and effect the very nature of the soul.

which succeeded another modification. It is *Paryaya* proper

Note VI Each of the seven stand points has a greater extent or denotation than the one which follows it *Naigama* has thus the greatest and *Ebambhuta* the least extent *Naigama* deals with real and unreal *Sangraha* with real only *Vyavahara* only with a part of the real *Riju Sutra* with only the present condition of a part of the real *Sabda* with only the expression of the real *Samabhirudha* with only that particular expression, which applies to the thing in its present activity

Note also that each of the seven *nayas* is dependent on the one preceding it

The Principle stand points are 7 But in practice, the stand points can obviously be many more according to the point of view from which the things considered or spoken of

The other systems of philosophy recognise the following topics

(1) *Bauddhas* They recognise the 5 *Skandhas*, (*Khandhas*) or Aggregates or groups
Vijnana Consciousness
Vedana Feeling
Sanjna Perception recognising and naming
Sanskara (*Sankhara*), 50 other mental accompaniment specially will that arise when consciousness is submitted
Rupa Material or body

(2) *Naiyayikas* 16 *Padarthas* namely *Pramana* *Prameya* *Sansya* Doubt *Prayojana* *Dristanta* *Sidhanta* *Avayava* *Tarka* *Nirnava* *Vada* *Jalpa* *Vitanda* *Hetvabhasa* *Chhala* *Jati* *Nigrahasthana*

(3) *Vaisesika* 7 *Padarthas namely* *Dravya* *Guna* *Karma* *Samamya* *Visesa* *Samavaya* *Abhava*

(4) *Samkha* 25 *Tattvas namely* *Prakriti* *Pradhana* *Ahamkara* *Karamendriya*
5 *Jhana-endriya*
5 *Mana*
Tanmatras (*Sabda* *Sparsha* *rupa* *rasa* *gandha*)
5 *Bhutas* (Earth water fire air space) *Purusa* *Nirvikara* self, pure and perfect soul

दूसरा अध्याय

CHAPTER II

SUTRA 1

औपशमिकक्षायिकौ भावौ मिश्रश्च जीवस्य
स्वतत्त्वमौदयिक पारिणामिकौ च ॥

Aupashamikakshayikau bhavau mishrascha jivasya
swattatvamaudayika parinamikau cha.

The soul's own thatness, i e, thought activity (is of five kinds)

(1) औपशमिक *Aupashamika*, Subsidential, (That which rises from the subsidence of a *Karma* of the deluding kind)

(2) क्षायिक *Kshayika* destructive, Purified (That which rises from the destruction of *Karmas* e.g., the 4 घातिया *Ghatiya* destructive *Karmas*)

(3) मिश्र *Mishra* Mixed (i e क्षायोपशमिक *Kshayopasamika* destructive subsidential that which rises from the partial destruction subsidence and operation of destructive *Karmas*)

(4) औदयिक *Audayika* operative (that which rises from the operation i e, fruition of *Karmas*

(5) पारिणामिक *Parinamika* Natural (The soul's own natural thought activty independent of *Karmas*)

The first four of these thought-nature have *reference to* their various causes.

The 5th is the own, pure nature *of the soul* which is always *there but in* an impure condition because of its being in conjunction and *co-existence with* three other thought *natures* viz those due to the subsidence (aupashamika) *destruction* subsidence and operation (Kshayopashamika) *or to the operation of Karmas* (Audayika)

Here it is necessary to *understand* the distinction between 8 kinds of *Karmas*

There are 2 main classes

(1) घातिया *Ghatiya* or Destructive *Karmas* which attach and effect the very nature of the soul.

which succeeded another modification It is *Paryaya* proper

Note VI Each of the seven stand points has a greater extent or denotation than the one which follows it *Naigama* has thus the greatest and *Ebambhuta* the least extent *Naigama* deals with real and unreal *Sangraha* with real only *Vyavahara* only with a part of the real *Riju Sutra* with only the present condition of a part of the real *Sabda* with only the expression of the real *Samabhirudha* with only that particular expression, which applies to the thing in its present activity

Note also that each of the seven *nayas* is dependent on the one preceding it

The Principle stand points are 7 But in practice the stand points can obviously be many more, according to the point of view from which the things considered or spoken of

The other systems of philosophy recognise the following topics

(1) *Bauddhas* They recognise the 5 *Skandhas*, (*Khandhas*) or Aggregates or groups
Vijnana Consciousness
Vedana Feeling
Sanjna Perception recognising and naming
Sanskara (*Sankhara*) 50 other mental accompaniment specially will that arise when consciousness is submitted
Rupa Material or body

(2) *Naiyayikas* 16 *Padarthas* namely *Pramana* *Prameya* *Sansya* Doubt *Prayojana* *Dristanta* *Sidhanta* *Avayava* *Tarka* *Nirnaya* *Vada* *Jalpa* *Vitanda* *Hetvabhasa* *Chhala* *Jati* *Nigrahasthana*

(3) *Vaisesika* 7 *Padarthas namely Dravya* *Guna* *Karma* *Samanya* *Visesa* *Samavaya* *Abhava*

(4) *Samkha 25 Tatvas namely Prakriti* *Pradhana* *Ahamkara* *Karamendriya*
5 *Jhana endriya*
5 *Mana*
Tanmatras (*Sabda* *Sparsha* *rupa* *rasa* *gandha*)
5 *Bhutas* (Earth water fire air space) *Purusa* *Nirvikara* self pure and perfect soul

दूसरा अध्याय

CHAPTER II

SUTRA 1

औपशमिकक्षायिकौ भावौ मिश्रश्च जीवस्य
स्वतत्वमौदयिक पारिणामिकौ च ॥

Aupashamikakshaykau bhavau mishrascha jivasya
svattatvamaudayika parinamikau chas

The soul s own thatness i e thought activity (is of five kinds).

(1) औपशमिक *Aupashamika*, Subsidential, (That which rises from the subsidence of a *Karma* of the deluding kind)

(2) क्षायिक *Kshayika* destructive, Purified (That which rises from the destruction of *Karma's* e g, the 4 घातिया *Ghatiya*, destructive *Karma s*)

(3) मिश्र *Mishra*, Mixed (i e क्षयोपशमिक *Kshayopashamika* destructive subsidential that which rises from the partial destruction subsidence and operation of destructive *Karmas*)

(4) औदयिक *Audayika* operative (that which rises from the operation i e, fruition of *Karmas*

(5) पारिणामिक *Parinamika* Natural (The soul s own natural thought activity independent of *Karmas*)

The first four of these thought nature have reference to their various causes

The 5th is the own, pure nature of the soul, which is always there but in an impure condition because of its being in conjunction and co existence with three other thought natures viz those due to the subsidence (aupashamika) destruction subsidence and operation (Kshayopashamika) or to the operation of *Karmas* (Audayika)

Here it is necessary to understand the distinction between 8 kinds of *Karmas*

There are 2 main classes

(1) घातिया *Ghatiya* or Destructive *Karmas* which attach and effect the very nature of the soul

(2) घातिया *Aghatiya*, or non destructive *Karmas*, which do not effect the very nature of the soul They are feeling, body family and age *Karmas* i e the वेदनीय *Vedaniya* नाम *nama*, गोत्र *Gotra* and आयु *Ayu Karmas* respectively

Vedaniya or Feeling the pleasure and pain bearing *Karmas* are also *Aghatiya* Pain and pleasure are illusory more or less, because they are due to *Vedaniya* acting with *Mohaniya* Deluding *Karmas* and it is then only that the thought-nature of the soul is affected

The *Ghatiya Karmas* are four —

(1) ज्ञानावरणीय *Jnanavarniya* Knowledge obscuring It simply obscures knowledge

(2) दर्शनावरणीय *Darshana varniya* conation obscuring It simply obscures conation (*Darshana*)

(3) मोहनीय *Mohaniya* Deluding It intoxicates the soul It is a short of General of the enemy host of *Karmas* It affects both rights-belief and right-conduct It is like a solution of both right belief and right conduct It is like a solution of chalk in water The water is clouded and opaque The solution may settle down and the opacity being lost transparency may be restored to the water, or by processes the chalk may be entirely separated from the water and permanent transparency obtained Therefore this *Karmas* can merely subside or patially subside or partially sudside and partially be destroyed, or be entirely destroyed This alone can subside in the proper ense of the world

(4) अन्तराय *Antaraya*, Obstructive *Karmas* The 5 thought-natures are, as they are found —

I In mundane soul here there is उदय *Udaya* operation of *Karmas* in all Of course a mundane soul is one bound with *Karmas*

The thought-nature of soul is of 4 kinds according as it is the result of—

1 Subsidence merely
2 Destruction merely
3 Operation merely
4 All three combined of the *Karmas*
and
5 Its own natural thought activity i e its soulness and its capacity or incapacity of deing liberated,

II In Liberated souls there is no *Udaya of Karmas* because there are no *Karmas* to operate The soul rests in its own pure nature in its own thought activity

The क्षयिकभाव *Kshyikabhava* is identical with this when all the *Karmas* have been destroyed If only a few are destroyed, e.g only right belief-deluding *Karmas* the mudane soul has क्षयिकभाव *Kshayikabhava* proper, which of course is not identical with *Parinamikabhava*

Thus Liberated souls have 2 thought activities —

1 That which arises from the destruction of all *Karmas*, and

2 Their own pure self-thought activity Bhava is the nature of the soul as affected by *Karmas* In its own pure nature it has its own *bhava* the *Parinamika* But in mundane souls, the soul is found bound with matter This matter is constantly changing The change corresponds with a change in the soul also The character of this change is the cause of the different *Bhavas* in the soul

Note— That of five thought natures] each one of the first 3 is found in innumerable-fold souls compared with the one preceding it In the 4th and 5th are found infinitely more souls than the third. Thus Subsidential thought nature is found in the least and Parinamika in the greatest number of souls

Note—That the first 2 natures can arise only in a soul capable of attaining liberation never in any other

Note—That there is subsidence only of the deluding *Karma* (*Mohaniya*) and never of any other Destruction of all the eight Destruction subsidence only of four destructive *Karmas* Operation of all the eight

SUTRA 2

द्विनवाष्टादशैक-विंशति-त्रिभेदा यथाक्रमम् ॥ २ ॥

Dwinawastadasaikavinsatitribheda Yathakramam

(They are) of two, nine, eighteen twenty one and three kinds respectively



SUTRA 3

सम्यक्त्वचारित्रे ॥ ३ ॥

Samyaktvacharitre

(The two kinds are) belief (and) conduct

Note--(1) (औपशमिक सम्यक्त्व *Aupashamika Samyaktva*) subsidential right-belief i e right-belief due to the subsidence of Darshana-mohaniya, right-belief deluding *Karmas* and the four अनन्तानुबंधि कषाय *Ananta-nubandhi-Kasayas*, i e, anger pride deceit greed which feed these *Karmas* i. e the error-feeding-passions.

(2) औपशमिक चारित्र *Aupsamika* charitra subsidential right conduct i e right conduct caused by the subsidence of चारित्र मोहनीय *Charitra mohaniya* right-conduct-deluding *Karmas*

Subsidential belief arises as follows --

(1) In hellish beings it can arise a little less than 48 minutes (one *antramuhurta*) after their birth by उपपाद *upapada* instantaneous rise The external causes are

Up to 3rd hell, memory of past incarnations

Hearing the preachings by friendly celestials visiting them

Suffering too much pain.

The rest of hells have only 2 i e the above leaving out Preaching

(2) In human beings it can arise from 4 to 8 days after their birth. The external causes are

Memory

Preaching

Sight of *Tirthankara* s image.

(3) In human beings 8 years after birth The causes are same as in sub-human beings

(4) In celestial beings one *antaramuhurta* after their birth. The external causes are

Up to 12th heaven, Memory

Preaching

Sight of *Tirthankara* s glory

Sight of Supernatural powers of celestial beings.

From 12th to 16th heaven the above 4 except the last In the 9 *graiveyakas* the first two only, Memory and Preaching

SUTRA 4

ज्ञानदर्शनदानलाभभोगोपभोगवीर्याणि च ॥४॥

Jnanadarsanadanalabha bhogopabhogaviryani cha

(The nine kinds are) Knowledge conation charity gain enjoyment, re enjoyment power and (belief and conduct)

1 क्षायिक ज्ञान (*Kshayikajnana*) Destructive purified or perfect knowledge due to the destruction of knowledge obscuring (Jnanavarniya) *Karmas*

2 क्षायिक दर्शन (*Kshayikadarshana*) Destructive purified or perfect conation due to the destruction of the *Karmas* which obscure it i e of दर्शनावरणीय कर्म *Darshana-varniya Karmas*

3 क्षायिक दान (*Kshayikadana*) Destructive or purified charity Bestowal of fearlessness etc due to destruction or purification caused by destruction of charity-obstructive Karmas e g, the soul s capacity of removing from all living beings all kinds of apprehension of any veil as proceeding from himself It is caused by the destruction of all Karmas दानान्तराय *Danantraya* which obstruct the exercise of this capacity

4 क्षायिक लाभ (*Kshayikalobha*) Destructive or purified gain Infinite gain due to purification caused by the destruction of all *Labhantaraya* or gain obstructive *Karmas* e g a man with perfect knowledge (i e केवली omniscient Kevali) always assimilates the molecules of fine quasikarmic matter

5 क्षायिक भोग (*Kshayika bhoga*) Destructive or purified enjoyment Infinite attainment of consumable objects due to purification caused by the destruction of all भोगान्तराय *Bhogantaraya* or enjoyment-obstructive *Karmas* This becomes the cause of miraculous manifestations such as the shower of flowers by celestial beings etc

6 क्षायिक उपभोग (*Kshayikaupabhoga*) Destructive or purified re enjoyment Infinite attainment of nonconsumable objects due to purification cuased by the destruction of all उपभोग अन्तराय *Upabhogantaraya* re-enjoyment obstructive *Karma*. This becomes the cause of the miraculous throne, canopy etc etc

7 क्षायिक वीर्य (*Ksahyikaviriya*) Destructive or purified power Infinite power due to purification caused by the destruction of all वीर्यान्तराय *Viryantaraya* or power-obstructive *Karmas*

8 क्षायिक सम्यक्त्व (*Kshayika Samyaktva*) Destructive Purified or perfect right belief i e, perfect belief due to the destruction of three sorts of right belief-deluding Karmas (i e of Karmas causing

मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva* wrong belief, सम्यक्त्वमिथ्यात्व मिश्रप्रकृति *Samyaktva Mithyatva mixed* right-wrong belief and सम्यक्त्व प्रकृतिमिथ्यात्व *Samyaktva Prakriti-Mithyatva*, right-belief clouded by the slightest wrong belief) and the four अनन्तानुबंधी कषाय *Anantanubandhi Kashayas* i e; the error-feeding passions of Anger Pride, Deceit and Greed which feed the above

9 क्षायिक चारित्र (*Kshayikacharitra*) Destructive purified or perfect right conduct due to purification caused by the total destruction of right conduct-deluding Karmas Charitra Mohaniya

SUTRA 5

ज्ञानाज्ञानदर्शनलब्धयश्चतुस्त्रित्रिपञ्चभेदाः सम्यक्त्वचारित्रसंयमासंयमाश्च ॥५॥

Jnanasnadarsanalabhayaschatustritripanchabhedah Samyaktvacharitrasanyamasamamamscha

(The 18 kinds are)—4 kinds of (right) Knowledge, 3 wrong Knowledge 3 conations, 5 attainments, right belief, conduct, and control non control

Note K-Kshaypashamika i e Destructive-subsidential, Kshayopasham is destruction-subsidence of सर्वघाति स्पर्द्धक Sarvaghati spardhaka i e of Karmic-matter which totally obscures and the operation of देशघाति स्पर्द्धक Deshaghati spardhaka i e. Karmic-matter the operation of which obscures only partially

(4) क्षायोपशमिकज्ञान (*KshayopashamikaJnana*) i e K right- knowledge (it is of) 4 (kinds)-1 Mati, Sens tive 2 Sruta Scriptural 3 Avadhi Visual and 4 Manahparyaya mental)

(3) क्षायोपशमिकअज्ञान (K) Ajnana (i e K wrong knowledge It is of 3 kinds 1 कुमति *Kumati* wrong sensitive knowledge 2 कुश्रुत *Kusruta* wrong scriptural knowledge and 3 कुअवधि Kuavadhi wrong visual knowledge The last is also called विभंगज्ञान *Vi-bhanga Jnana* wrong visual knowledge

(3) क्षायोपशमिकदर्शन (K) *Darshana* (i e K Conation) It is of three kinds 1 चक्षु *Chakshu* Ocular by mean of the eye

2 अचक्षु Achakshu non ocular by means of the other senses and mind

3 अवधि *Avadhi* visual They precede their respective knowledge

(5) क्षायोपशमिकलब्धि (K) *Labdhi* i e K attainment acquisition. It is of 5 kinds —

1 दान *Dana* charity of 4 kinds-food medicine konwledge and fearlessness

2 लाभ *Labha* gain

3 भोग *Bhoga* enjoyment of consumable things

4 उपभोग *Upabhoga* re enjoyment or enjoyment of non-consumable things.

(5) वीर्य *Virya*, power

All these are imperfect, because they are due only to partial destruction subsidence and operation of their respective अन्तराय *Antaraya* obstructive *karmas*

(1) क्षायोपशमिकसम्यक्त्व (K) *Samyaktva* i e K right-belief This is imperfect because it is due to the destruction or subsidence of मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva* and सम्यक्त्वमिथ्यात्व *Samyaktvamithyatva* i e wrong and mixed right-wrong belief deluding *Karmas* and of the four error-feeding passions anger pride deceit and greed called अनन्तानुबन्धीकषाय *Anantanubandhi Kashaya* and which feed the above *Karmas* and by the operation of सम्यक्त्व प्रकृतिमिथ्यात्व *Samyaktva-prakritimithyatva* i e right belief slightly clouded by wrong belief.

(1) क्षायोपशमिकचारित्र (K) *Charitra* i e K right conduct Imperfect because it is due to the partial destruction subsidence and operation of right conduct deluding *Karmas* and

(1) क्षायोपशमिक संयमासंयम (K) *Samyama-Samyama* (i. e) K. control-non control. Taking only partial vows It is due to the destruction or subsidence of अनन्तानुबंधी *Anantanubandhi* error-feeding and अप्रत्याख्यान *Apratyakhyana* partial vow preventing कषाय 18 *Kashayas* or the passions of anger, pride deceit and greed and by the operation of the remaining kinds of passions

SUTRA 6

गतिकषायलिंगमिथ्यादर्शनाऽज्ञानाऽसंयताऽसिद्धलेश्याश्चतुश्चतुस्त्र्येकैकैकैकषड्भेदाः ॥६॥

Gatikashayalingamithyadarshanajnanasamyatasiddhaleshya schatuschatrustyekaikaikaikasadbhedah

(The 21 are) —

4 kinds of condition
4 passions
3 sexes
1 wrong belief,
1 ignorance
1 vowlessness,
1 non-liberation

6 paints.

The 21 kinds of thought-activity due to the operation of *Karmas* relate to —

1 गति *Gati* Condition of existence of 4 kinds —

(1) नरक *Naraka* hellish.

(2) तिर्यंच *Tiryancha* sub human

(3) मनुष्य *Manushya* human and

(4) देव *Deva*, celestial

2. कषाय *Kashayas* Passions of 4 kinds

(1) क्रोध *Krodha* anger;

(2) मान *Mana*, pride;

(3) माया *Maya*, deceit and

(4) लोभ *Lobha* greed

3 लिंग *Linga* Sexes of 3 kinds

(1) स्त्रीवेद *Stri-veda* Feminine inclinations

(2) पुरुषवेद *Purushaveda* Masculine inclinations

(3) नपुंसकवेद *Napunsaka veda*, Common or neuter inclination

(4) मिथ्यादर्शन *Mithya-darshana* wrong belief

(5) अज्ञान *Ajnana* Ignorance

(6) असंयत *Asanyata* Vowlessness or non controls

(6) असिद्ध *Asiddha* Unliberatedness

(8) लेश्या *Leshya* Through points of 6 kinds —

(1) कृष्ण *Krishna*, black

(2) नील *Nila* blue,

(3) कापोत *Kapota*, grey;

(4) पीत *Pita* yellow,

(5) पद्म *Padma* pink, and

(6) शुक्ल *Sukla* white

SUTRA 7

जीवभव्याऽभव्यत्वानि च ॥७॥

Jivabbavyabhavytvani cha

(The 3 kinds of the soul s natural thought-activity are)

1 जीवत्व *Jivatva* Consciousness livingness or soulness in a soul

(2) भव्यत्व *Bhavyatva* Capacity of being liberated.

3 अभव्यत्व *Abhavyatva* Incapacity of becoming liberated

Pure Jivatva जीवत्व is limited to the सिद्ध *Siddhas* Mundane

souls must have *Jivatva* but alleged with Bhavyatva on Abhavyatva These 3 are peculiar to Jiva च "cha refers to those attributes which Jiva has in common with non Jivas as —

अस्तित्व *Astitva* Isness

द्रव्य *Dravyatva* Being a substance, changeability

प्रदेशत्व *Pradeshatva* Capacity to occupy space, etc etc (see Chapter, V, Sutra 2)

SUTRA 8

उपयोगो लक्षणम् ॥ ८ ॥

Upayoga lakshanam

The Lakshna or differentia of soul (is) Upayoga attention consciousness attentiveness

लक्ष्य *Lakshya* is that of which the differentia is

लक्षण *Lakshna* is आत्मभूत *Atambhuta* inseparable and अनात्मभूत *Anatmabhuta* separable As *Jivatva* is an inseparable but a celestial condition of existence is a separable quality of the soul.

SUTRA 9

स द्विविधो ऽष्टचतुर्भेदः ॥ ९ ॥

Sa dvidhostachaturbhedah,

(Attention is of) 2 kinds which is subdivided into 8 and 4 kinds respectively

ज्ञानोपयोग *Jnanapyoga* knowledge-attention It is of 8 kinds, relating to 5 kinds of right and 3 kinds of wrong knowledge

दर्शनोपयोग *Darshanopayoga* conation attention It is of 4 kinds relating to 4 kinds of conation viz *Chakshu Achakshu Avadhi* and *Kevala* i e ocular non-ocular visual and perfect conation respectively)

उपयोग *Upayoga*, is a modification of consciousness, which is an essential attribute of the soul Thus attentiveness is a kind of consciousness Consciousness is a characteristic of the knower, the soul consciousness is not mere passive or potential knowledge, nor is it merely a capacity to know, It is active It is related to the self It means that the soul is aware that it conates or knows something about itself or the non self Attentiveness is only the direction or tendency of consciousness to apprehend or comprehend a

thing If it is directed merely to an awareness that something i present to it but cannot be described It is *Darshanopayoga*, if it i directed to know this something definitaly, it is ज्ञानोपयोग *Jnaropayoga*

Attentiveness is essential to conation and knowledge There can be no conation or knowledge without attention There can be conation without knowledge There can be no knowledge without ultimate conation of some kind or other There can be no attention without consciousness

Thus the stages of knowledge may be received to be consciosu ness Conation Attention Conation Knowledge-Attention and Knowledge

SUTRA 10

ससारिणो मुक्ताश्यच ॥ १० ॥

Samsarino muktascha

(They are of 2 kinds)

समारि *Samsari* mundane and मुक्त *Mukta*, Liberated souls. Mundance souls wander in 5 kinds of परिवर्तन *Parivartana*, cycle o wandering —

(1) द्रव्यपरिवर्तन *Dravya parivartana* matter cycle

It is of two kinds quasi-karmic and karmic नोकर्म No karma, quasi karmic is the time which the soul takes in renewing exactly the same set of a particular number and quality of molecules as it took once Quasi-karmic

कर्म *Karma* or karmic is the time taken in renewing exactly the same set of a particular number and quality of 8 karmas as the oul took in once The time taken in both of these is called one matter cycle or द्रव्य *Dravya* or पुद्गल *Pudgala* परिवर्तन *Parivartna* For example a soul takes on a body to day with its quasi-karmic and karmic matter It goes on changing both When in the couse of its changes it again chances to take on a similar body with similar quasi-karmic and karmic-matter, it is said to have completed one matter cycle (Dravya parivartana)

(2) क्षेत्र परिवर्तन *Kshetra-Parivartna* Space Cycle The time taken by one soul in going once round every single point of space in the Universe consecutively beginning from the foot of Mount Meru

(3) कालपरिवर्तन *Kalo parivartna* Time Cycle e g a soul is born in the first समय *Samaya* or instant of an अवसर्पिणी *Avarpini*, then in the 2nd *Samaya* of another (next or any other) Avasarpini, then in

the 3rd samaya of a third and so on; till in the last samaya it is born in the last samaya of a new Avasarpini Similarly it must be born in उत्सर्पिणी Utsarpini eras Then it must die in each samaya of the two eras like the above The time taken to go through all this is a Time Cycle (*Kalaparivartna*)

(4) भवपरिवर्तन *Bhavaparivartna* Incarnation Cycle e.g a soul is born in hell with the minimum age of 10 000 years He is reborn again (after other births) in hell with 10 000 years age This goes on as many times as there are samayas in 10 000 years Then he is reborn there with an age of 10 000 years and one samaya then with an age of 10 000 years and 2 samayas and thus at every birth he adds one samaya till he is born with the maximum age of 33 सागर *Sagaras* The time taken is called Hellish Cycle Similarly with the Celestial Cycle; but there the minimum is 10 000 years and the maximum is only 31 Sagaras upto the 9th ग्रैवेयक *Graiveyaka*

In the Sub-human and human Cycles the minimum is one अन्तर्मुहूर्त *antarmahurta* and the maximum is 3 पल्य *palyas* The procedure is the same as in Hellish and Celestial Cycles.

The time taken in all these four cycles is called one Incarnation Cycle

(5) भावपरिवर्तन *Bhava-parivartana* Thought Cycle In numerable units of souls योगस्थान, *Yoga-Sthana*, Vibratory activity, make one अनुभाग बन्ध अध्यवसाय स्थान *Anubhaga bandha Adhyavasaya Sthana* or a degree of the passion which determines intensity or bondage In numerable × in-numerable *Anubhaga bandhas* make one कषाय अध्यवसाय स्थान *Kashaya Adhyavasaya Sthana* i e. one degree of passion which determines the duration of bondage In numerable × in numerable *Kashaya* etc. make one जघन्यस्थितिबंध *Jaghanya sthiti bandha* i e minimum duration of bondage in a rational wrong-believing person This is अन्त: कोड़ा कोड़ी सागर *Antah crore × crore sagars* One स्थिति *Sthiti* needs that the soul should pass through every one of the in numerable योगस्थान *Yog sthanas* to earn one अनुभागबंध *Anubhaga bandha* and then so on to earn one *Sthiti* Thus it should go up to the maximum duration of each one of the 8 Karmas of course adding only one samaya at each step onwards from the minimum duration When it has thus gone through the 8 *karmas* and their 148 divisions it is said to have done one Thought Cycle (Bhava parivartana)

In numeral and Infinite numbers can be easily realised by a consideration of recuring decimals in dividing 10/3 3 333 ad inf we get an infinite quotient; or of famous relation of the circumference of

a circle to its diameter $\pi = 22/7$ or of the square root $2(\sqrt{2})$, which may be properly said to represent an in-numberable quotient. In the science of Arithmetic these are called "ir-rational numbers

SUTRA 11

समनस्कामनस्का ॥११॥

Samanaskamanaskah

(The mudane souls are of 2 kinds)

समनस्क *Samanaska* Rational those who have a mind i e, the faculty of distigushing right and wrong

अमनस्क *Amanaska* Ir-rational those who have no mind

मन *Mana*, mind in द्रव्यमन *dravya-mana* objective mind It is in the region of the हृदय *heart* like an 8 petalled flower made of मनोवर्गणा *Manovargana* or very fine mind molecules

भावमन *Bhava-mana* subjective mind is the soul's capacity to make use of the objective mind

Subjective mind means the destruction subsidence of the *Karma* which obscures the quasi sense or mind, (*no-Indriyaavarana Karma*) (*See Jiva Kanda of Gommatsara Gatha 659*)

The signs of rationality are - capacity of receiving instruction (*Siksha*); understanding actions (*Kriya*); preaching (*Upadesha*); and recitation (*alapa*); (J K 660)

A rational soul investigates before acting what ought or ought not to be done distingushed between things as they are and as they are not in reality He also comes to you on being called by his name (J K 661)

SUTRA 12

संसारिणस्त्रसस्थावरा ॥१२॥

Sansarinastrasathavarah

The mundane souls (are of 2 kinds from another point of view)

त्रस *Trasa*, Mobile Many sensed, i e, having a body with more than one sence.

स्थावर *Sthavara* Immobile, one-sensed i e, having only the sense of touch Mobile souls are those which being in fear, have the capacity of moving away from the object of fear Immobile souls do not have this capacity

SUTRA 13

पृथिव्यप्तेजोवायुवनस्पतय स्थावरा ॥१३॥

Prithivyaptejo vayu vanaspatayah sthavarah

Immobile (one sensed souls) (are of 5 kinds)

(1) पृथ्वी *Prithvi* earth-bodied,

(2) अप *Ap* water bodied,

(3) तेज *teja* fire bodied,

(4) वायु *Vayu* air-bodied, and

(5) वनस्पति *Vanaspati* Vegetable bodied

Each of these is considered in 3 aspects e g the earth souls -
Take earth-bodied -

(2) पृथ्वी कायिक *Prithvi kayika* as embodied in matter, as earth bodied soul

(3) पृथ्वीकाय *Prithvi kaya* as material body as the body without soul It is dead earth after the soul has left it

(4) पृथ्वीजीव *Prithvi jiva* as an earth-soul as the soul which is to be embodied in the earth, but is now in विग्रहगति *vigrahagati* or in transition from one existance to another Similarly *apajiva apakaya* and *apakayika* etc

The maximum size of the body of an earth water fire and air-soul is an innumberble part of a cubic finger Therefore *it is quite* invisble We see it only in a mass Take a glass of fresh water Every drop of it is a mass of many water bodied souls The many minute animalculae seem under the microscope are foreign or other souls They are not water bodied souls Water bodied souls have water and that alone the matter of their bodies Similarly the earth etc souls.

As to the forms the bodies of earth water fire and air souls they are respectively oval like a pea of masoora (seed) round like a drop of water long cylindrical with pointed tips like a collection of needless and oblong like a flog (J K 22)

SUTRA 14

द्वीन्द्रियादयस्त्रसा

Dvindriyadatastrasah

(Mobile or many su

With 2 senses

With 3 senses

4

5 , without mind, अमनस्क *Amanaska*, ir-rational and

" with mind, समनस्क *Samanaska* rational.

Note on प्राण *Pranah*, vitalities Vitality is a from of consciousness as manifested through a body of a mundane soul

There are 10 kinds of *Prana* of vitality, i e the 5 senses 3 powers of mind body and speech; age and respiration

The one sensed souls have 4 vitalities viz touch, power of body age and respiration

The two sensed souls add to these 4 the senses of taste and power of speech

The three sensed souls add to these 6 the sense of smell

The four sensed souls add to these 7, the sense of sight

The five sensed rational souls add to these 8 the sense of hearing

The five sensed irrational souls add to these 9 the power of mind

SUTRA 15

पञ्चेन्द्रियाणि

Panchendriyani

The senses are five

SUTRA 16

द्विविधानि ॥१६॥

Dvividhani

(They are of) 2 kinds —

(1) द्रव्येन्द्रिय *Dravyendriya* objective senses sense-organs and

(2) भावेन्द्रिय *Bhavendriya* subjective-senses sense faculties

SUTRA 17

निर्वृत्युपकरणे द्रव्येन्द्रियम् ॥१७॥

Nirvrittyupakaranedravyendriyani

Objective senses or sense organs (have a two-fold formation) —

(1) निर्वृत्ति *Nirvriti* (the organ itself, e g the pupil of the eye)
(2) उपकरण *Upakarana* (its Protecting environment e g the eye-lid etc.)

Each formation is of 2 kinds अन्तरंग *Antaranga* internal and *Vahiranga* बहिरंग external

Internal organ means the soul itself which is co extensive with and of the same form as the organ in which it incarnates

External organ means the material organ which is permeated by the internal organ or the soul

Internal environment is the matter immediately surrounding the organ, e g , the corner of the eye

External environment is the matter which is not so immediately situated with reference to the organ as the eye lid

SUTRA 18

लब्ध्युपयोगौ भावेन्द्रियम् ॥१८॥

Labdhyupayogobhavendriyam

Bhavendriyas subjective sense sense faculties (are of 2 kinds —
(1) लब्धि *Labdhi* (it is the attainment of manifestation of the sense faculty by the partial destruction subsidence and operation of the knowledge-obscuring karma relating to *that sense*)
(2) उपयोग *Upayoga* (the conscious attention of the soul directed *to that sense*)

SUTRA 19

स्पर्शनरसनघ्राणचक्षुः श्रोत्राणि ॥१९॥

Sparsanarasanaghrana chakshusrotrani

(The senses are)

स्पर्शन *Sparshana* Organ of Touch	i e the skin	the whole body
रसन *Rasana*	Taste	tongue
घ्राण *Ghrana*	Smell	nose
चक्षु *Chakshu*	Sight	eyes.
श्रोत्र *Shrotra*	Hearing	ears



SUTRA 20

स्पर्शरसगन्धवर्णशब्दास्तदर्थाः ।२०॥

Sparsarasagandhvarnasabdastadarthah

The functions (of the 5 senses are to determine the various kinds of) touch, taste smell colour and sound (respectively)

स्पर्श *Sparsha* Touch is of 8 kinds उष्ण *Usna* hot; शीत *Sita* Cold, रूक्ष, *Ruksha* rough; स्निग्ध *Snigdha*, Smooth कोमल *Komala* soft; कठोर *Kathora*, hard; लघु *Laghu* light, and गुरु *Guru* heavy

रस *Rasa* Taste, is of 5 kinds तिक्त *Tikta*, pungent; अम्ल *Amla* acid कटु *Katu* bitter; मधुर *Madhur* sweet; and कषाय *Kasaya* astringent

गन्ध *Gandha* Smell is of 2 kinds सुगन्ध *Sugandha* sweet smelling fragrant दुर्गन्ध *Durgandha* bad-smelling malodorous

वर्ण *Varna* Colour is of 5 kinds कृष्ण *Krishna* black नील *Nila* blue पीत *Pita* yellow and शुक्ल *Sukla* white पद्म *Padma* pink

शब्द *Sabda* sound; स्वर *Svara* is of 7 kinds षड्ज *Sadja*; ऋषभ *Risabha*, गन्धार *Gandhara* मध्यम *Madhyama*; पञ्चम *Panchama*; धैवत *Dhaivata* and निषाद *Nisadha* i e the Do re me fa sol la si

In all there are 27 main kinds which can be combined in innuummerable combinations

Note —That in rational beings mind also assists the senses in bringing knowledge to the soul

SUTRA 21

श्रुतमनिन्द्रियस्य ॥ २१ ॥

Srutamanindriyasya

(The function) of the mind (is the) cognition of Scriptural knowledge

Note — Scriptural knowledge of a short is possible among the souls without a mind also (See Note under chapter 1 Sutra 30, above)

SUTRA 22

वनस्पत्यान्तानामेकम् ॥ २२ ॥

Vanaspatyan tanamekam

(The earth-bodied water-bodied fire-bodied air-bodied) up to

the vegetable bodied souls (have only) one (sense i e touch They know only by means of touch)

SUTRA 23

कृमिपिपीलिकाभ्रमरमनुष्यादीनामेकैकवृद्धानि ॥ २३ ॥

Krimipipilikabhramaramanusyadinamekaikvriddhani

Krimi worms etc (have 2 senses touch and taste)

Pipilika ants etc , (have 3 senses touch taste and smell)

Bhramara bumble bee etc (have 4 senses touch, taste smell and sight)

Manushya man etc (have 5 senses touch taste smell sight and hearing)

Each (class has) one (sense) more than the one preceding it

SUTRA 24

संज्ञिनः समनस्काः ॥ २४ ॥

Sanjninah samanaskah

The rational (beings are also called)-

Sanjni (i. e one who has got sanjna mind here)

Elsewhere it means name desire knowledge etc

All the celestial human and hellish beings are rational. Some 5 sensed sub-humans are also rational such as cow horse ape, pigeon serpents etc.

SUTRA 25

विग्रहगतौ कर्मयोगः ॥२५॥

Vigrahagatukarma yogah

In *Vigrahagati* transmigration (i e the passage of the soul from one incarnation to another there is only) *Karmic* body vibration (*Karma Yoga*) by which the electric and *Karmic* molecules are attracted by the soul.

SUTRA 26

अनुश्रेणि गतिः ॥ २६ ॥

Anusrenigatih

(In *Vigraha-gati* transmigration or passage from one incarnation to another, the soul's) movement (is always) in a straight line

श्रेणि *Sreni* a straight line of spatial units from end to end) parallel with one of the 6 directions

East-West North South, up and down, either way

An indivisible atom of matter (परमाणु *Parmanu*) can go straight from the lowest limit of the Universe to its highest point i e, a distance of 14 राजु *Rajus* in one samaya

SUTRA 27

अविग्रहा जीवस्य ॥ २७ ॥

Avigrahajivasya

(The soul in its pure condition, i e the liberated) soul has (a straight upward) vertical movement, the movement is called अविग्रह *avigraha* because it is quite direct and upward, vertical and there is no turning in it)

SUTRA 28

विग्रहवती च संसारिणः प्राक्चतुर्भ्यः ॥ २८ ॥

Vigrahevatichasansarinah prakchaturbhayah

Vigrahavati or passage from one incarnation to another of a mundane soul (takes place) before 4 (*Samay* as at the most)

A समय *Samaya* is the time taken by an atom of matter in passing from one प्रदेश i e point of space, to the next

Why 4 *Samyas*? The soul takes one *samaya* in going in one direction Each turning means one *Samaya* In the Universe there can not possibly be more than 3 turnings necessary for the soul's passage Therefore 3 *samayas* or less than 4 *samayas* are enough for the most crooked passage. In the fourth *samaya* the soul must incarnate in its new body

SUTRA 29

एकसमयाऽविग्रहा ॥ २६ ॥

Ekasamayavigraha

Where the passage is straight and there is no turning it takes only one *samaya*

Even an atom of matter in going from one end of the Universe to the other in a straight upward or vertical direction, takes only one *Samaya* if it goes fastest

SUTRA 30

एक द्वौ त्रीन्वानाहारक: ॥ ३० ॥

Ekamdvautrinvanaharakah

(In the) one two or three (*Samayas* of its passage, the soul remains) अनाहारक, *Anaharaka* non assismilative, (that is does not attract the molecules of *aharaka* assimilative matter of which the external bodies i e the physical fluid and *aharaka* bodies are formed.)

(Note that only *karmayoga* takes place i e; only *Karmic* electric matter is attracted See सूत्र *Sutra* 25 *Supra*)

Note also that in a straight passage of the soul one *samaya* is taken in leaving one body and occupying the other And in the passage, the soul continues to be *aharaka*, although in the passage itself, it is not necessary for it to attract *no-karmic* molecules as it leaves the molecules already attracted in its last body and will attract a fresh batch in the new body which it is going to put on in the same *samaya*.

SUTRA 31

सम्मूर्छनगर्भोपपादा जन्म ॥ ३१ ॥

Sammurchhanagarbhopapadajanma

(Birth is of 3 kinds.)

सम्मूर्छन *Sammurchana* spontaneous generation. It is the result of surrounding matter combining and forming the physical body for the incarnating soul.

गर्भ *Garbha* Uterine birth It is the forming of the physical body by the union and development of father's seed and moth blood in the womb of the female In the Embryolo

the union between a sperm and an ovum resulting into a fusion of the two cells into one single cell called the fertilised ovum'

उपपाद *Upapada* Instantaneous Rise (Instantaneous grouping together of the वैक्रियक, *Vaikriyaka,* matter to form the *Vaikriyaka* or fluid body which is peculiar to hellish and celestial beings)

SUTRA 32

सचित्तशीतसंवृताः सेतरा मिश्राश्चैकशस्तद्योनयः ॥ ३२ ॥

Sachittasitasamvritah setaramisraschaikasastadyonayah

Living matter, cold covered with their opposities and the combination of each (pair) (are) their nuclei or birth places (योनि, *yoni,* nucleus, the material environment in which the incarnating soul finds lodgment is of 9 kinds —

सचित्त *Sachitta,* of living matter as the stomach, in which worms may appear

अचित्त *Achitta,* of matter only with no life as a wall or table in which mosquitoes may be generated

सचित्ताचित्त, *Sachittachitta* of living and dead matter; as lice in a slut s blouse or hat The person is living but the blouse or hat is dead matter

शीत, *Shita,* cold. Some microbes take birth on account of cold

उष्ण *Ushna,* Hot Some microbes take birth on account of *heat*

शीतोष्ण, *Sihtoshna* Where life is generated by the co-existense of cold and heat

As the heat of sun breeding gnats in a stagnant pool of water

संवृत, *Samvrata* Covered As fruit may go bad and breed germs in it if it is kept packed for a long time

विवृत *Vivrata* Exposed As moss in a piece of water

संवृत विवृत, *Samvrata vivrita* Part exposed and part covered

The hellish and celestial beings take birth in अचित्तयोनि *achittayonis*

Souls taking birth from a womb employ a सचित्ताचित्त योनि *Sachittachitta yoni*

सम्मूर्छन, *Sammurchanas* employ *sachitta achitta,* and *sachittachittayonis*

Hellish (नारकी) and celestial beings (देव) have hot and cold (some one and some the other) nucleus

Fire-bodied souls (तेजस्कायिक) have a hot one The others have hot or cold or mixed

Hellish, celestial and immobile beings have a covered nucleus The विकलत्रय *Vikalatraya* i e from 2 to 4 sensed beings have an open-covered nucleus

The different combinations of these *yonis* yield 8400000 योनि, *yonis* as follows —

नित्यनिगोद *Nitya nigoda*, souls which have never yet come out of a condition of common vegetables; where many souls occupy one body as a potato

Their *yonis* are	7 00 000
इतर निगोद *Itaranigoda* souls which have gone back to *nigod*	7,00 000
पृथ्वी कायिक earth bodied ; अपकायिक water-bodied; तेज कायिक fire-bodied ; and वायु कायिक air bodied all four each 7 00 000 — —	28 00 000
वनस्पति कायिक Vegetables (Trees etc.) except *nigoda*	10 00 000
For स्थावर *sthavaras* sould	5200000
, द्वि इन्द्रिय 2 sensed	200000
त्रि 3	200000
चतु 4	200000
पंच , 5 animals	400000
5 , human beings	1400000
देवा celestial beings	400000
नारक, hellish	400000
Total	8400000

SUTRA 33

जरायुजाण्डजपोतानां गर्भः ३३॥

Jarayujandajapotanam garbhah

Uterine birth (is of 3 kinds)

जरायुज *Jarayuja* Umbilical (Birth in a yolk sack flesh envelope like a human child)

अण्डज *Andaja* Incubatory (Birth from a shell like an egg)

पोत *Pota* Unumbilical (Birth without any sack or shell, like a cub of a lion or a kitten.)

SUTRA 34

देवनारकाणामुपपादः ॥३४॥

Devanarakanamupapadah

Upapada i e birth by instantaneous rise (is) peculiar to hellish and celestial beings.

SUTRA 35

शेषाणां सम्मूर्छनम् ॥३५॥

Sesanamsammurchhanam

All the rest (i e except those born by embroyonic birth and instsaneous rise are) सम्मूर्छन *Sammurchhana*, born by spontaneous generation

SUTRA 36

औदारिकवैक्रियिकाहारकतैजसकार्मणानि शरीराणि ॥३६॥

Audarikavaikriyikaharaktaijasakarmani sarirani

The bodies are of 5 kinds —

1 औदारिक *Audarika* the physical (body of all men and animals)

2 वैक्रियक *Vaikriyika* Fluid (The body of hellish and celestial beings which they can change at will)

3 आहारक, *Aharaka* assimilative (the spiritual man like emanation from the head of a saint in doubt, etc)

4 तैजस *Taijasa* Electric (body of mundane souls formed of fine molecules of electric matter called *Taijasa Vargana*)

5 कार्मण *Karmana Karmic* (body of mundane souls made of fine molecules of *Karmic* matter called *Karmana Varganas* कार्माण वर्गणा)

The first 3 bodies are made of *Aharaka Vargana*, molecules of assimilative matter

SUTRA 37

परं परं सूक्ष्मम् ॥३७॥

Param paramsuksmam

(Of these 5 bodies) each successive one (is) finer, i e, subtler (than the one preceding it.)

SUTRA 38

प्रदेशतोऽसख्येयगुण प्राक्तैजसात् ॥३८॥

Pradesatosamkhyeyagunam praktaijasat

(From the 1st to the 3rd body, i e) up to the Electric body (each one has) innumerable times the number of atoms (which are in the one preceding it)

SUTRA 39

अनन्तगुणे परे ॥३९॥

Anantagune pare

Of the last two (i.e the electric and the *Karmic* bodies each one compared with the body immediately preceding it has an) infinite fold (number of atoms)

SUTRA 40

अप्रतीघाते ॥४०॥

Apratighate

(The electric and *Karmic* bodies are) unpreventible (in their passage i e they can penetrate and permeate upto the end of the (Universe)

The Fluid (वैक्रियक) and *Aharak* (आहारक) assimilative bodies can also penetrate but at some places they can not Their penetrative does not extend beyond (त्रसनाडी) *Trasa nadi* the mobile channel beyond where mobile souls are not found

SUTRA 41

अनादिसम्बन्धेच ॥ ४१ ॥

Anadi Sambandhe cha

And their connection (i e of the electric and the *karmic* bodies with the soul is) without beginning That is these two are always found in every soul and are absent only in liberated souls (सिद्ध) But of course being material, they are always discarding their old constituent particles and attracting and assimilating new particles in the place of the old From this point of view, a particular electric or *karmic* body is ... beginning.

SUTRA 42

सर्वस्य ॥ ४२ ॥

Sarvasya

(The electric and the karmic bodies are always found) with all (*mundane* souls)

SUTRA 43

तदादीनि भाज्यानि युगपदेकस्याचतुर्भ्यः ॥ ४३ ॥

Tadadini bhajyani yugapadekasyachaturbhyah

Along with these (two i e, the electric and the *karmic* bodies) in their distribution at one and the same time, with one soul (there can be utmost upto 4, (i e, these two and one or two more bodies) i e, a soul can never have all the 5 bodies at once Electric and *Karmic* bodies it must always have But if it has more it can add only one or two more as follows -

In विग्रहगति *Vigrahagati* or passage from one incarnation to another the soul has only 2 bodies the तैजस, electric and the कार्मण, *Karmic*

In human and sub-human condition of existence, the soul has 3, i e, the electric the *Karmic* and the physical bodies

But the saints sometimes have these 3 and the आहारक *Aharara* assimilative body also i, e 4 bodies at one and the same time This is the highest limit

The hellish and celestial being also have 3 bodies, The electric the *Karmic* and the fluid bodies

SUTRA 44

निरुपभोगमन्त्यम् ॥ ४४ ॥

Nirupabhogamantyam

The last (body i e the *karmic* is) निरुपभोग *nirupabhoga*, i e, can not be the means of enjoyment to the soul through the senses and the mind as the physical body can be e g the *karmic* body bears no sound sees no sights, etc.

Note—The तैजस electric body is like the *karmic* body *nirupabhoga* There is no योग *yoga* on vibration or cause of attraction of subtle matter in it.

SUTRA 45

गर्भसम्मूर्च्छनजमाद्यम् ॥ ४५ ॥

Garbhasammurchhanajamadyam

The first (i e, the physical body is produced along with the electric and the *karmic* bodies, in beings who are) born in the embryonic way (गर्भ) or by spontaneous generati on (सम्मूर्छन)

SUTRA 46

औपपादिकं वैक्रियिकम् ॥ ४६ ॥

Aupapadikam Vaikriyikam

The fluid body (is found along with the electric and the *karmic* bodies in those who are) born by उपपाद instantaneous rise.

SUTRA 47

लब्धिप्रत्ययं च ॥ ४७ ॥

Labdhipratyayan cha

And (fluid body can also be attained by other) cause i e by a लब्धि *labdhi* attainment due to special austerities

But this is of course in exceptional circumstances

SUTRA 48

तैजसमपि ॥ ४८ ॥

Taijasamapi

Even the elebtric (body can be product of special austerities)

This takes place in two ways —

(1) शुभ तैजस, *Subha taijasa* Beneficent electric body, e g, a saint with supernatural powers sees famine or plague etc in a country and is moved to compassion His austerities enable his electric body to overflow itself and issuing out of his right shoulder go and to remove the causes of famine plague etc, and then come back and be reabsorbed in the same way in which it went out

(2) अशुभ तैजस *Asubha taijasa* Maleficent electric body, e g, the same saint being moved to anger, the duplicate body will go f[illegible]

from the left shoulder and having consumed the object of anger, will return to go into the saint and consume him also

SUTRR 49

शुभ विशुद्धमव्याघाति चाहारक प्रमत्तसयतस्तस्यैव ॥ ४६ ॥

Subham visuddhamavyoghati chaharakampramattasamyata syaiva

And the *Aharaka* body (is) beneficent pure and impreventible and found only in a *pramatta samyata* saint, (i e one in the 6th stage of spiritual development with imperfect now)

It is (1) शुभ, *Subha*, (always) beneficent

(2) विशुद्ध *Vishuddha*, pure, (the production of meritorious karmas,) and

(3) अव्याघाति, *Avyaghati*, unpreventible (by anything in its course)

The आहारक शरीर *Aharaka* body is the spiritual man like emanation that flames forth from the head of a saint when he wants to remove his doubt on some momentous and urgent point; the flaming from flashes across space touches or sees the feet of some omniscient Lord (*kevalin*) or a saint with perfect scriptural knowledge (श्रुतकेवली *shruta kevalin* like भद्रबाहु *Bhadrabahu* the preceptor of चन्द्रगुप्त Chandragupta Maurya) and thus having removed the doubt re-enters the saint's head

All this is done of course with lightning rapidity; but it never takes more than one *antarmuhurata*, i e; 48 minutes, minus one instant

SUTARA 50

नारकसम्मूर्च्छिनो नपुसकानि ॥ ५० ॥

Narakasammurchhino napumsakani

The hellish beings (and those who are) सम्मूर्छन *sammurchana*) spontaneously generated (are of) a common or neuter sex

SUTRA 51

न देवा ॥ ५१ ॥

Na devah

The celestial beings never (have a common sex They are always masculine or feminine.)

SUTRA 52

शेषास्त्रिवेदा. ॥ ५२ ॥

Shasastrivedah

The remaining (beings, i e, those born of an embryo, have) 3 sexes, (i e they can be masculine feminine or common)

लिंग *linga* or sex is of 2 kinds

द्रव्यलिंग *Daraiya linga* objective sex differentiating organs of the sexes,

भावलिंग *Bhava Linga* subjective sex thought activity relating to sexual inclinations

SUTRA 53

औपपादिक चरमोत्तमदेहासंख्येयवर्षायुषोऽनपवर्त्यायुष ॥ ५३ ॥

Aupapadika charamottamadehasamkhyeyavarsayusoana pavartyayusah

(Those who are) born by instantaneous rise (i e hellish नारकी and celestial beings देव (those who are in their) last (incarnation चरम देह *charama body*) with the highest (kind of) physical body (and those whose) age is innumerable years (e g human and sub-human beings in भोगभूमि *bhoga bhumi* enjoyment land i e in a condition of life where there is all enjoyment and no labour like agriculture etc (these three live the full span of) their life (It can) never (be) cut short (by themselves or others)

The remaining beings i e human and sub human beings in कर्म भूमि, *Karm bhumi* work land i e the condition of life where agriculture etc are necessary for sustenance can have their lives cut short, by external causes as accident uicide disease etc etc



तीसरा अध्याय

CHAPTER III

SUTRA 1

रत्नशर्करावालुकापंकधूमतमोमहातमः प्रभाभूमयोघनाम्बुवाताकाशप्रतिष्ठा सप्ताधोऽधः ॥ १ ॥

Ratnasarkaravalukapankadhumatamomahatamah prabhabhumayoghana nbuvatakasha pratisthah saptadhoadhah

[NoTE —To understand this chapter it is necessary to consider maps I and II of Loka (लोक) and the 2½ Dvipas (अढ़ाई द्वीप) with their explanations]

There are 7 earths lying parallel to each other and with an intervening space separating one from the other Beginning from the earth which we inhabit these earths are situated each one lower than the other (Each one is surrounded and) supported by (3 atmospheres) of

घनवात *Ghana vata* gross air atmosphere;
अम्बुवात *Ambuvata* vapour atmosphere;
तनुवात *Tanvata* thin air atmosphere ;
(and is enveloped by) space (These) 7 earths (are)

1. रत्नप्रभा *Ratna prabha* in hue like jewels (16 varieties of which are found in it as diamond ruby, etc etc)
2. शर्कराप्रभा *Sharkara prabha* in hue like sugar
3. वालुकाप्रभा *valuka prabha* in hue like sand
4. पंकप्रभा *panka prabha* in hue like mire
5. धूमप्रभा *Dhuma prabha* in hue like smoke
6. तमःप्रभा *Tamah prabha* in hue like darkness
7. महातमःप्रभा *Mahatamah prabha* in hue like pitch darkness

The वातवलय *vata valayas* or atmospheres are each 20 000 योजन *yojanas* thick at the bottom of the Universe

Each one of these earths is separated from the next by an interval of one rajju

In each of these intervals there are the 3 atmospheres also supporting the upper earth

Ratna Prabha is 1 80 000 yojanas thick It has 3 parts The uppermost khara bhaga is 16 000 yojanas thick The 16 kinds of jewels diamonds etc are found in it In the middle 14 000 yojanas of these 16,000 there live all the 10 kinds of Residential (Bhavanavasi) celestial beings except the Asura Kumara and all the 8 kinds of

Peripatetic (Vyantara), celestial beings the Raksasa

The middle part is Panka bhaga 84 000 yojanas thick The Asura and Raksasa live here The lowest part is Abbahula bhaga 80 000 yojanas thick The first hell is situated here i e only in the mobile channel (Trasa nadi) of this part

Sharkara Prabha is 32 000 yojanas thick The second hell is situated in the mobile channel in this

Valuka Prabha has 28 000 yojanas and the third hell

Panka Prabha has 24 000 yojanas and the fourth hell

Dhuma Prabha has 20 000 yojanas the fifth hell

Tamah Prabha has 16 000 yojanas and the sixth hell

Maha Tamah Prabha has 8 000 yojanas and the seventh hell

SUTRA 2

तासु त्रिंशत्पंचविंशतिपंचदशदशत्रिपंचोनैकनरकशतसहस्राणिपंचचैव-
यथाक्रमम् ॥ २ ॥

Tasu trinshatpachavinshatipanchadashatripanchonai kanarakashatasahasranipanchachaivayathakramam

In these (earths there are the following) hells respectively

30	*lacs (in the 1st)*
25	(2nd)
15	(3rd)
10	(4th)
3	(5th)
99 995	(6th)
5 lacs	(7th)

Total 84 lacs

The hellish beings are born and live in [these hells. These hells are really huge holes in which the hellish beings live They are in different layers (Patala) The 1st to the 7th earths have 13 11 9, 7, 5 3 and 1 layer for each of the 1st to the 7th hell respectively i e 49 layers in all

In each layer there is a central hole (Indraka bila) and rows (Sreni badbha) of holes in the 4 cardinal and 4 intermediate directions

In the first layer there are 49 in each of the cardinal directions, and 48 in each of the intermediate corners

In the second layer the numbers are 48 and 47 in the third 4[illegible]

and 46 ; till in the 49th layer the number of holes is 1 and 0 Thus in the last or 49th layer there is a central hole and 4 holes in the East West North and South 5 holes in all

The rest of the holes in the 1st 6 hells are called sporadic (Prakirnaka Thus there are

49	Central (Indraka)
9604	in the 8 directions (Srem baddha)
8390347	Sporadic (Prakirnaka)
84 00 000	

SUTRA 3

नारका नित्याशुभतरलेश्यापरिणामदेहवेदनाविक्रिया ॥ ३ ॥

Naraka nitya shubhatara lesya parinama deha vedana vikriyah

Hellish beings always (have) very bad thought-colours sense perceptions and their objects, bodies feelings of pain and transformations

Hellish beings always have the colour (लेश्या, *lessya,* the paint of body and thought, *i e* द्रव्यलेश्या *dravya lessya* and भावलेश्या *bhava lessya*) of the 3 lower lessyas *viz* कृष्ण black नील indigo and कापोत grey

Grey (कापोत *kapota*) only in hells of 1st and 2nd earths ; grey (कापोत) and indigo (नील *nila)* in the 3rd, indigo only in the 4th, indigo and black (कृष्ण *krisna)* in the 5th, and (कृष्ण *krisna)* black in the 6th and thus the 7th द्रव्यलेश्य *dravya lesyha* or body paint persists throughout life, but bhava leshya changes with the character of thought-activity One special bhava leshya or thought-colour does not last for more than one मुहूर्त *muhurta, i e* 48 minutes Hellish beings also always have the lowest kinds of sense perceptions *i e* the sound is harsh touch is rough and hard etc Their environment including themselves is horrible

Their bodies are also grotesque, *e g* हुण्डक *hundaka* disproportionate as a small head with a huge trunk and long feet etc The height of the body in the first hell is 7 bows 3 cubits and 6 fingers

It doubles at each next hell, till in the 7th hell it is 500 bows as 24 fingers = 1 cubit, and 4 cubits = 1 bow

The pangs which they suffer are very acute and intense They change their bodies at will but the transformation is always of a low

and cruel character, such as that of a wolf raven etc. etc

All the hells in the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th hells and the upper 2 lacs in the 5th hell are all hot All the rest are cold

SUTRA 4

परस्परोदीरितदुःखा ॥ ४ ॥

Parasparo dirita duhkhah

The tortures (of hellish beings are) produced (by them for another

SUTRA 5

संक्लिष्टासुरोदीरितदुःखाश्च प्राक् चतुर्थ्याः ॥ ५ ॥

Samklista suro dirita duhkhascha Prak chaturthyah.

Before the 4th (earth i e in the 1st 2nd and 3rd earths, in the hells) the evil minded (celestial beings called) Asura kumaras also give torture (to the hellish beings or incite them to torture one another)

SUTRA 6

तेष्वेकत्रिसप्तदशसप्तदशद्वाविंशतित्रयस्त्रिंशत्सागरोपमा सत्त्वानां परा स्थितिः ॥ ६ ॥

Tesveka trisaptadasha sapta dasha dvavinsati trayastrim-shat sagaropama satvanam para sthitih.

In these (seven hells) the maximum age of [illegible] [illegible] different earths as follows

1 सागरोपमा *Sagropama* or सागर *sagara* [illegible]
3 or *sagars* [illegible]
7 [illegible]
10 [illegible]
17 सागरोपमा *Sagropama* or *sagaras* [illegible]
22 [illegible]
33 [illegible]

1 सागर *Sagara* = 10 × (crores [illegible]

1 अद्धापल्य *Addhapalya* = [illegible] 1 [illegible] yojana i e, 2000 [illegible] with

the ends of the downy-hair of a lamb of 7 days, born in the highest bhoga bhumi उत्कृष्टभोगभूमि One end of hair is taken out in every 100 years, The time taken to empty the pit is a व्यवहारपल्य *vyaaahara palya* Innumerable *vyavahara palyas* make one उद्धारपल्य *Uddhara palya*

Innumerable uddhara palyas make one अद्धापल्य *Addha palya*

SUTRA 7

जम्बूद्वीपलवणोदादयः शुभनामानो द्वीपसमुद्राः ॥ ७ ॥

Jambu-dvipa lavano dadayah shubhana-mano dvipa samudrah,

Jambudvipa Continent, Lavana samudra (ocean) etc, (etc, are) the continents and oceans being pleasant names.

In the middle world (मध्यलोक *madhya loka*) there are innumerable *dvipas* (द्वीप) continents and *samudras* (समुद्र) oceans

They all have pleasant (or auspicious) names Their names are

1 जम्बूद्वीप *Jambu dvipa*, in which we live
लवणसमुद्र *Lavana samudra*, salt ocean

2 धातकीखण्डद्वीप *Dhataki khanda dvipa*, then
कालोदधिसमुद्र *Kalodadhi samudra*, then

3 पुष्करवर द्वीप *Puskaravara dvipa*, then
पुष्करवर समु *Puskaravara samudra*, then

4 वारुणीवरद्वीप *Varunivara dvipa*
वारुणीवरसमुद्र *Varuuavara dvipa*,

5 क्षीरवरद्वीप *ksiravara dvipa*,
क्षीरवर समुद्र *ksiravara samudra*

6 घृतवरद्वीप *Ghritavara dvipa*,
घृतवरसमुद्र *Ghritavara samudra*,

7 इक्षुवरद्वीप *Iksuvara dvipa*
इक्षुवरसमुद्र *Iksuvara samudra*,

8 नंदीश्वरद्वीप *Nandishvara dvipa*,
नंदीश्वर समुद्र *Nandishvara samundra*,

9 अरुणवरद्वीप *Arunavara dvipa*,
अरुणवरसमुद्र *Arunavara samudra*

The last ones are:
स्वयम्भूरमणद्वीप, *Swayambhu ramana dvipa*
स्वयम्भूरमणसमुद्र, *Swayambhu ramana samudra*

SUTRA 8

द्विर्द्विर्विष्कम्भाः पूर्वपूर्वपरिक्षेपिणो वलयाकृतयः ॥ ८ ॥

Dvirdvir viskambhah purvapurva pariksepino valaya kritayah

(The oceans and continents each one have twice the breadth of the one immediately preceding it. Thus [illegible] Jambu dvipa is 1 lac योजन, *Yojanas* in breadth the [illegible] *Lavana samudra* is 2 lacs, the धातकीखण्डद्वीप *Dhatuki khand dvipa* is 4 lacs and so on.) Each one surrounds the one immediately preceding it. (They are all [illegible] in form

SUTRA 9

तन्मध्ये मेरुनाभिर्वृत्तो योजनशतसहस्रविष्कम्भो जम्बूद्वीपः ॥ ९ ॥

Tanmadhyemerunabhirvrittoyojanshatasahasraviskambhah jambudvipah

In [the middle of these (concentric oceans and continents) is Jambudvipa which is) round (like the disc of the sun). In the centre of Jambu dvipa) like the navel (in the human body, is situated [illegible] meru (Jambu dvípa is) 1 lac yojanas in breadth.

1 योजन (big) yojana=2000 kosas.
1 योजन (small) yojana=4 kosas
Here the reference is to the big yojanas, 1 yojana=2000 kosas 500 times the small one

SUTRA 10

भरतहैमवतहरिविदेहरम्यकहैरण्यवतैरावतवर्षाः क्षेत्राणि ॥ १० ॥

Bharatahaimavataharivideharamyakahairanya vatairava-rsahksettrani

The divisions Ksettras (of Jambu dvipa are [illegible]) भरत *Bharata* हैमवत *Haimavata*, हरि, *Hari*, विदेह, *Videha*, रम्यक, *Ramyaka*, हैरण्यवत, *Hairanyavata* and ऐरावत, *Airavata*

SUTRA 11

तद्विभाजिन पूर्वापरायता हिमवन्महाहिमवन्निषधनीलरुक्मिशिखरिणो वर्षधरपर्वता ॥ ११ ॥

Tadvibhajinahpurvaparayata himavanmahahimavan-nisidhanilarukmishikharino varsadharaparvatah

Dividing these (7 क्षेत्र *Ksettras* there are 6) mountains (They are) हिमवान *Himavan* महाहिमवान *Maha himavan* निषध *Nisidha*, नील *Nila* रुक्मि *Rukmi* and शिखरी *Shikhari* (These mountains) run East to West

SUTRA 12

हेमार्जुनतपनीयवैडूर्यरजतहेममया ॥ १२ ॥

Hemarjjunatapaniyavaiduryarajatahemamayah

(The 1st moutain, i e हिमवान *Himavan*, is) golden in colour ; (the 2nd silvery white); (the 3rd red like red-hot gold; (the 4th is) blue (like the neck of a peacock;) (the 5th) silvery (white); (and the 6th) golden मया (*maya*) in this sutra means like

SUTRA 13

मणिविचित्रपार्श्वा उपरिमूले च तुल्यविस्तारा ॥ १३ ॥

Manivichitraparshva upari mule cha tulyavistarah

The sides (of these 6 mountains are) studded with various jewels (and they are of) equal width at the foot, the top and (the middle)

SUTRA 14

पद्ममहापद्मतिगिञ्छकेशरिमहापुण्डरीकपुण्डरीका ह्रदास्तेषामुपरि ॥ १४ ॥

Padmamahapadmatiginchhakesharimahapundrikapun-drikahradastesamupari

On the top of these (mountains there are the following 6) lakes (respectively) पद्म *Padma* महापद्म *Mahapadma* तिगिञ्छ *Tiginchha*, केशरि *Keshari* महापुण्डरीक *Mahapundrika*, and पुण्डरीक *Pundrika*

SUTRA 15

प्रथमो योजनसहस्रायामस्तदर्द्धविष्कम्भो ह्रद ॥१५॥

Prathamo yojanasahasrayamastadarddhaviskambbo hradah

The first lake (has a) length (of) 1000 yojanas (and a) breadth of) half of that (i e 500 yojanas)

SUTRA 16

दशयोजनावगाहः ॥ १६ ॥

Dashayojanavagah.

(The first lake has a) depth (of) 10 yojanas.

SUTRA 17

तन्मध्ये योजनं पुष्करम् ॥ १७ ॥

Tanmadhyeyojanampuskaram.

In the centre of this (first lake there is a lotus ...) yojana (broad)

SUTRA 18

तद्द्विगुणद्विगुणा ...

Taddvigunadvigunahrada...

(Each of the three) lakes ... length breadth and depth ... of) twice (the breadth of the ... it)

SUTRA 19

तन्निवासिन्यो देव्य ...
... ॥ १९ ॥

Tannivasinyo devyah ... yah palyopamasthitayah ...

The goddes ... Shri ..., Hri ..., D... (each one of the ... palya. (These ... with them, called ... ate memb...

le-

...th of

...himavana

...extent of ksetras ...ding to (those in)

... ॥ २१ ॥

...bhaya-mut-

...uth and north ...age height ...and Ava-...pectively)

...

Ganga ...

sitoda nari narakanta suvarna rupyakula rakta raktodah saritas tan madhyagah

The rivers गंगा the *Ganga*, सिन्धु the *Sindhu* रोहित the *Rohit*, रोहितास्या the *Rohitasya*, हरित the *Harit*, हरिकान्ता the *Harikanta*, सीता the *Sita*, सीतोदा the *Sitoda* नारी, the *Nari*, नरकान्ता the *Narakanta*, सुवर्णकूला, the *Suvaranakula* रूप्यकूला the *Rupyakula* रक्ता the *Rakta* रक्तोदा the *Raktoda* the Raktoda *flow in those (seven ksetras*, 2 in each respectively, i e, Ganga and Sindhu in Bhairta, Rohit and Rohitasya in Haimvata, etc etc)

SUTRA 21

द्वयोर्द्वयो पूर्वा पूर्वगा ॥ २१ ॥

Dvayordvayoh purvah purvagah

(These 14 rivers must be taken in groups) of 2 each The first (of each group as named above,) flows eastwards (and falls into the ocean there)

SUTRA 22

शेषास्त्वपरगा ॥ २२ ॥

Shesastva paragah

But the others flow westwards (and fall into the ocean there)
. These rivers have their sources as follows

Ganga, Sindhu and Rohitasya spring from the lake Padma			
Rohita and Harikanta	,		Maha Padma
Harit and Sitoda		"	Tiginchha
Sita and Narkanta	,	,	Keshari
Nari and Rupya kula	"	"	Mahapundarika
Suvarnakula Rakta and Raktoda spring		,	Pundarika

SUTRA 23

चतुर्दशनदीसहस्रपरिवृता गंगासिन्ध्वादयो नद्या ॥ २३ ॥

Chaturdashanadi sahasra parivrta ganga sindhvadayo nadyah

Ganga and Sindhu have 14 000 tributary rivers each, and others, i e, the next pair (Rohit and Rohitasya) have twice, i e 28 000 each. Harit and Harikanta have 56 000 each, Sita and Sitoda have 1,12,000

each Nari and Narkanta have 56 000 ; Suvarnakula Rupyakula 28,000 and Rakta Raktoda 14 000 each

SUTRA 24

भरत षड्‌विंशतिपंचयोजनशतविस्तार षट्‌चैकोनविंशति भागा योजनस्य ॥२४॥

Bharatah sad vinsati pancha yojana shata vistarah sat chaikona vinshati bhaga yojanasya

Bharat ksetra in its widest part measure $526\frac{6}{19}$ yojanas

SUTRA 25

तद्विगुणद्विगुणविस्तारा वर्षधरवर्षा विदेहान्ता ॥ २५ ॥

Tadviguna dviguna vistara varsadhara varsa videhantah

Each mountain and ksetra in breadth has double the baeadth of the mountain or ksetra preceding it (This is upto) Videha

Thus Bharata ksetra is $526\frac{6}{19}$ yojanas in breadth, the Himavana mountain is double of this i e, $1052\frac{12}{19}$ yojanas ; and so on

SUTRA 26

उत्तरा दक्षिणतुल्या ॥ २६ ॥

Uttara daksina tulyah

To the north (of videha the arrangement and extent of ksetras mountains rivers lakes, islands is exactly) corresponding to (those in) the south (of it)

SUTRA 27

भरतैरावतयोर्वृद्धिह्रासौ षट्समयाभ्यामुत्सर्पिण्यवसर्पिणीभ्याम् ॥ २७ ॥

Bharatairavatayorvrddhirasau satsamayabhaya-mutsarpinyavasarpinibhyam

In Bharata and Airavata ksetras (in the extreme south and north o Jambudivpa there is) increase and descrease of (bliss age height, etc of their inhabitants in the 2 aeons) utsarpini (उत्सर्पिणी) and Avasarpini (अवसर्पिणी) (the aeons of increase and decrease respectively) There are 6 ages (in each aeon)

The ages in avasarpini the present aeon are सुखमासुखमा *Sukhama-sukhama* सुखमा *Sukhama* सुखमा-दुखमा *Sukhama-Duhkhama* दुखमासुखमा *Dukhama sukhama* दुखमा *Dukhama* and दुखमादुखमा, *Dukhama-dukhama*. We are now in the Dukhama or the 5th age (पंचमकाल); this began in about 513 B C i e, 3 years 8½ months after the liberation of Lord Mahavira and its total duration is 21 000 years. The sequence of ages in the utsarpini is the reversing of the order of the Avasarpini and therefore the last 3 of the Utsarpini are ages of भोगभूमि *Bhoga-bhumi* the rest are of कर्मभूमि, *Karma bhumi*;

Each aeons is of 10×(1 crore×1 crore) सागर *sagaras*

In Avasarpini the ages have their duration as follows

1st=4 × (1 crore × 1 crore) sagras
2nd=3 , ,
3rd=2 " ,
4th=1 , minus 42 000 years
5th=21 000 years
6th=21 000 years

Altogether 10 × (1 crore × 1 crore) sagaras i e दसकोड़ाकोड़ी सागर

SUTRA 28

ताभ्यमपरा भूमयोऽवस्थिता ॥ २८ ॥

Tabhyamapra bhumayo avasthita

Excepting these two (Bharata and Airavata) the other (five) Earths are constant (There is no increase or decrease in bliss age, height etc there)

SUTRA 29

एकद्वित्रिपल्योपमस्थितयो हैमवतकहारिवर्षकदैवकुरवका ॥ २९ ॥

Ek dvitripalyopamasthitayo haimvatakaharivarsak daivakurvakah

(The men and animals) of Himvana Harivarsak Devakurnu (bhoga bhumi) are respectively of the one two and three palyas

SUTRA 30

तथोत्तरा ॥ ३० ॥

Tathottarah

(The condition of things is) the same in the north (of mount

Meru मेरु) Devakuru, Hari and Haimavata are replaced by Uttarakuru Ramyaka and Hairanyavata

SVTRA 31

विदेहेषु संख्येयकाला ॥ ३१ ॥

Videhesu samkhyeya kalah

In videha (men have an age of) numerable (संख्येय) years, i e the highest is 1 crore पूर्व *purvas* and the least is अन्तर्मुहूर्त *antara muhurta*

84 lac years=1 purvanga (पूर्वांग)

84 lac years 2=1 purva=70560000000000

1 crore purva=70560000000000 0000000 years

SUTRA 32

भरतस्य विष्कम्भो जम्बूद्वीपस्य नवतिशतभाग ॥ ३२ ॥

Bharatasya viskambho jambudvipasya navatishatabhagah

The breadth of Bharata Ksetra (is) 190 th part of the breadth of Jambu dvipa ($=\frac{100000}{190}=526\frac{6}{19}$ yojanas)

SUTRA 33

द्विर्धातकीखण्डे ॥ ३३ ॥

Dvir dhatakikhande.

In the Dhatakikhanda (which is the next region after salt ocean, लवणसमुद्र the number of ksetras, mountains rivers lakes etc is) double (of that in जम्बूद्वीप *Jambu dvipa*)

SUTRA 34

पुष्करार्द्धे च ॥ ३४ ॥

Puskararddhe cha

In (the nearest) half of Puskara dvipa also (the number of ksetras etc is double of that in Jambudvipa)

SURTA 35

प्राङ्मानुषोत्तरान्मनुष्या ॥ ३५ ॥

Pranmanusottaranmanusyah.

On this side of (alone) there are men

In the middle of Puskatavara dvipa (पुष्करवरद्वीप) running all round it is Manusottara (मानुषोत्तर) mountain It is so called because man is neither found nor born except on this side of it

SUTRA 36

आर्या म्लेच्छाश्च ॥ ३६ ॥

Arya mlechchhascha

(The human beings in these 2½ regions अढ़ाईद्वीप, are of two kinds)
आर्य *Arya* and म्लेच्छ *Mlechchha*, (i e respectively those who care and do not care for religion) Human beings are of 2 kinds

आर्य *Arya*, noble worthy, respectable

म्लेच्छ *Mlechchha*, barbarian, non Aryan, low savage Arya are of 2 kinds

ऋद्धिप्राप्त, *Riddhi* Prapta with supernatural powers.
अनृद्धिप्राप्त *Anriddhi* prapta without supernatural powers
ऋद्धि, *Riddhi* is of 7 kinds

1 बुद्धि *Buddhi* Enlightenment

2 विक्रिया, *Vikriya*, Capacity to change the body at will

3 तप *Tapa* Austerities

4 बल *Bala* Miraculous strength

5 औषध *Ausadha* Healing power

6 रस *Rasa* Capacity of an evil eye and its opposite etc

7 अक्षीण *Aksina* Capacity of making stores place etc inexhaustible

There are 64 sub classes of these 7
अनृद्धि आर्य *Anriddhi Aryas* are of 5 kinds

1 क्षेत्र *Ksetra* born in Aryakhanda one of the 6 divisions of Bharataksetra

2 जाति *Jati* born in high families like Iksvaku Suryavansa Nathvansa etc. etc.

3 कर्म *Karma* Arya by pursuit of military Literary Agriculture, Trade Arts Service

4 चारित्र *Charitra* Arya by right conduct

5 दर्शन Darshana Arya by right belief

म्लेच्छ *Mlechchhas* are of 2 kinds

1 कर्मभूमिज *Karma bhumija* i e born in the 5 Mlechchha divi

sions each of the 5 Bharataksetra and 5 Airavata and 800 in the Videhas The total divisions are 5 × 5 + 5 × 5+800=850

1 अन्तर्द्वीपज *Antara dvipaja* i e inter continental Mlechchhas There are 24 islands in लवणोदधि *Lavanodadhi* the first ocean round the first continent Jambu-dvipa

These islands are peopled by grotesque creatures with boars elephants horses and head on a human body or with long ears, one leg and similar grotesque formations of the body Their age is one palya पल्य and they live on fruits etc of trees.

500 yojanas from the circumference of Jambu-dvipa these 24 islands are situated in a circle in the लवणसमुद्र *Lavana Samudra* The islands in the 4 cardinal directions are 100 yojanas in breadth The 4 corner ones are 55 yojanas, and the remaining 16 are 50 yojanas in breadth. These 16 are 550 (instead of 500) yojanas from the circumference of Jambu-dvipa

SUTRA 37

भरतैरावत विदेहा कर्मभूमयोऽन्यत्र देवकुरूत्तरकुरुभ्य ॥ ३७ ॥

Bharatairavata videhah karmabhumayo anyatra devakuruttara kurubhyah

Bharata Airavata and Videha ksetras except Deva Uttara kurus (are the only regions where we find) Karma-bhumi (i e agriculture etc. for sustenance) This is also the region of piety and place from where liberation can be attained

SUTRA 38

नृस्थिती परावरे त्रिपल्योपमान्तमुहूर्ते ॥ ३८ ॥

Nristhiti paravare tripalyopamantar muhurte

The age of human beings (ranges from) a maximum of 3 Palyas to a minimum of one Antara-muhurta

Infinite × infinite atoms	= 1 *Utsanjnasanjna* (उत्संज्ञासंज्ञा)
8 Utsanjnasanjna	= 1 *Sanjnasanjna* (संज्ञासंज्ञा)
8 Sanjnasanjna	= 1 *Truti-renu* (त्रुटिरेणु)
8 Truti-renu	= 1 *Trasa renu* (त्रसरेणु)
8 Trasa-renu	= 1 *Ratha renu* रथरेणु)
8 Ratha renu	= 1 hair point of a hairbin highest enjoyment-land =

8 Such Hair Points — 1 hair point middle (म भ) enjoyment-land

8 — 1 , lowest (जघन्य) Enjoyment-land

8 = 1 hair point enjoyment-land action-land (कर्मभूमि)

8 , , = 1 Lisa nit (yonug louse or egg of a louse)

8 Nits = 1 Yuka louse

8 Lice = 1 Yava madhya barley-seed (in its diameter)

8 Barley-seeds = 1 Utseda Angula उत्सेध गुल (small finger) in its breadth

[500 Utseda Angulas = 1 Pramana Angula प्रमाणागुल, (big finger)

6 Angula = 1 *Pada* (पद)

2 Pada = 1 *Vitasti (span)* वितस्ति

2 Vitasti = 1 Latha (cubit) हाथ

2 Cubits = 1 *Kiku* किकु

2 Kikus = 1 *Dhanusya* (bow) धनुष

2000 Bows = 1 *Kosa* कोश

4 Kosas = 1 *Yojana* योजन

[A big or Pramana =500 small yojanas
=2000 kosas]

By the *Pramana Angula* प्रमाणागुल or 500 times of the ordinary measure continent oceans etc are measured

जगत्श्रेणि *Jagat shreni* = 7 *Rajus* राजू this is the length of the Universe at its lowest point

जगत्प्रतर *Jagat Pratara* = 7 *Rajus* × 7 *Rajus*=49 square *Rajus* the area of the base of the Universe

जगत् घन(लोक) *Jagat-ghana* or Loka = (7 *Rajus*)³ =343 cubic *Rajus* , the volume of the Universe

SUTRA 39

तिर्यग्योनिजाना च ॥३९ ॥

Tiryagyoni janam cha

The sub-human beings also (have the same range of age)

	Maximum age	Minimum age
Earth bodied	22000 years	
Vegetable bodied	10000 ,,	
Water bodied	7000	
Air bodied	3000 ,,	
Fire bodied	3 days	
2 sensed	12 years	one antar-
3	49 days	muhurta
4	6 months	
5 fish, etc.	1 crore purvas year	
Mongoose	9 purvangas ,,	
Serpent	42000 years	
Birds	72,000	
Quadrupeds	3 Palyas	



f
re

there
respe-

अध्याय चौथा

CHAPTER IV

SUTRA 1

देवाश्चतुर्णिकाया ॥ १ ॥

Devashchaturni Kayah

Celestial beings (are of) four orders groups or classes
भवनवासी *Bhavana vasi* Residential
व्यन्तर *Vyantara* Peripatetic
ज्योतिष्क *Jyotiska* Stellar
वैमानिक *Vaimanika* Heavenly

SUTRA 2

आदितस्त्रिषु पीतान्तलेश्या ॥ २ ॥

Aditastrisu pitanta lesyah

From the first to the third (have 4) lesyas or paints up to yellow
i e कृष्ण, *Black* नील, *Indigo*, कापोत, *Grey and* पीत *Yellow*

SUTRA 3

दशाष्टपञ्चद्वादशविकल्पा कल्पोपपन्नपर्यन्ता ॥ ३ ॥

Dashasta pancha dvadasha vikalpah kalpopapanna paryantah

भवनवासी, Residential celestial beings are of	10	classes
व्यन्तर *Peripatetic* ,,	8	,,
ज्योतिष्क *Stellar*	5	,,
कल्पवासी *Heavenly* ,, ,,	12	,,
Total ,,	35	Classes

(All these kinds are) born up to the Kalpa (the 16 heavens) Beyond that 16th heaven they are all alike ; there are no classes The Heavenly have 12 classes, because there are 12 Indras in 16 heavens

SUTRA 4

इन्द्रसामानिकत्रायस्त्रिंशपारिषदात्मरक्षलोकपालानीकप्रकीर्णकाभियोग्यकिल्बि-
षिकाश्चैकशः ॥ ४ ॥

Indra samanika trayastrimsha parisadatma raksa lokapala nika prakirnakabhiyogka kilbisikashchaikashah

Every class (has) 10 (grades)

Indra	Powerful and of Supreme authority like a king
Samanika	Powerful but not authoritative like Indra, like father, teacher.
Trayastrins	Like minister or priest so-called they are 33 in number
Parisad	Courtiers.
Atma raksta	Body-guards
Loka-pala	The police, the protectors of the people
Anika	The army
Prakirnaka	The people
Abhiyogya	That grade of celestial beings who turn themselves into conveyance as horse, swan etc etc., for the others.
Kilbisika	That servile grade.

SUTRA 5

त्रायस्त्रिंशलोकपालवर्ज्या व्यन्तरज्योतिष्काः ॥ ५ ॥

Traystrisha lokapala varjya vyantarajyotiskah

But the Peripatetic and Stellar celestial beings have Trayastrinsa like Minister or Priest and [illegible] denied

SUTRA ६

पूर्वयोर्द्वीन्द्राः ॥ ६ ॥

Purvayor [illegible]

In the first two (i e Residential [illegible] are) two Indras (or kings in each [illegible] sas) ctively) [illegible] ars

SUTRA 7

कायप्रवीचाराआऐशानात् ॥ ७ ॥

Kaya pravichara Aaaishanat

Up to Isana (or the 2nd heaven celestial beings which include all Residential Peripatetic and Stellar celestial beings) have bodily sexual enjoyment (like human beings)

SUTRA 8

शेषा स्पर्शरूपशब्दमन प्रवीचारा ॥ ८ ॥

Shesah sparsha rupa shabda manah pravicharah

The others have the sexual enjoyment by means of touch, sight of beauty sound and mind (as follows)

In 3rd and 4th	heavens by touch only	
In 5 6, 7 and 8th	,	sight only
In 9 10 11 and 12th		, sound only as songs etc
In 13 14 15 and 16th		, mind only

SUTRA 9

परेऽप्रवीचारा ॥ ९ ॥

Pareapravi charah

The remaining (celestial beings are without sexual desire (There are no goddesses there Beyond the 16th heaven there is only the male sex)

SUTRA 10

भवनवासिनोऽसुरनागविद्युत्सुपर्णाग्निवातस्तनितोदधि द्वीपदिक्कुमारा ॥ १० ॥

Bhavana vasino asurnaga vidyut suparnagni vata stanito dadhidvipa dikkumarah

(The 10 classes of) Residential celestial beings (are) Asurakumara Naga, Vidyuta Suparna Agni Vata Stanita Udadhi, Dvipa and Dik Kumara

They are called Kumaras because their lives and habits are like of youths of under 20 who are called kumaras,

The Residentials (भवनवासी) live as follows In the first earth Ratnaprabha, there are three strata one above the other with an interval of 1000 yojanas The first is called kharabhaga (खरभाग) this is the abode of 9 classes of Residentials i e of all except Asura Kumaras The Asucas reside in the 2nd stratum called panka-bhaga (पंकभाग) In the third or lowest stratum called Abbahula bhaga (अब्बहुलभाग), there is ituated the 1st hell

SUTRA 11

व्यन्तराः किन्नरकिम्पुरुषमहोरगगन्धर्वयक्षराक्षसभूतपिशाचाः ॥ ११ ॥

Vyantarah kinnara kimpurusa mahoraga gandharva yaksa raksasa bhuta pishachah

The (classes of) Peripatetics (are)

1 Kinnara
2 Kimpurusha
3 Mahoraga
4 Gandharva
5 Yaksha
6 Rakshasa
7 Bhuta
8. Pishacha

Some of these live in the innumerable Oceans and Continents i. e all excepts the Rakshasa live in the khara-bhaga or first uppermost stratum of the first earth Ratnaprabha The Rakshasas live in the 2nd or panka bhaga of the same

SUTRA 12

ज्योतिष्काः सूर्याचन्द्रमसौग्रहनक्षत्रप्रकीर्णकतारकाश्च ॥ १२ ॥

Jyotiskah surya chandramasau graha naksatra prakirnika tarakascha

The classes of settlers are

1 Surya the sun
2 Chandrama the moon
3 *Graha the planets*
4 Nakshatra the constellations
5 Prakirnika taraka, scattered stars

The stellars begin at a height of 790 yojanas (each of 2000 kosas) from the level of the earth on which we are The lowest are the stars.

10 yojanas above them are the suns 80 yojanas above the suns are the moons 4 yojanas above the moons are the 27 nakshatras, 4 yojanas above the nakshatras is the Budha, the planet mercury 3 yojanas above them is the Shukra, the Plant Venus 3 yojans above them the Vrhaspati the plant Jupiter, 3 yojanas above them is the Mangala or Angaraka the planet Mars; 3 yojanas above them is the Sanaishchara the planet Saturn

Thus up to 900 yojanas from the earth-level upwards are found the stellar order of celestial beings The yojana here is 2000 kosas

SUTRA 13

मेरुप्रदिक्षणानित्यगतयोनृलोके ॥१३॥

Meru pradiksana nitya gatayo nrloke

In the human regions, (i e the 2½ dvipas, the stellars) always move round (their respective) Mount Meru (but their nearest orbit to the Central Meru in Jambu-dvipa has a radius of 1121 yojanas That is they never appear in a circle of 1121 yojana radius round the Central Meru)

SUTRA 14

तत्कृत कालविभाग ॥ १४ ॥

Tatkrtah kala vibhagah

Divisions of time (are) caused by those (movements of the stellars)

SUTRA 15

बहिरवस्थिता ॥ १५ ॥

Bahiravasthitah

(The stellars) outside the 2½ dvipas i e beyond Manusottara mountain in the middle of Puskaravara dvipa are) fixed (They never move)

SUTRA 16

वैमानिका ॥ १६ ॥

Vaimanikah

Now we go on to) the heavenly beings.

SUTRA 17

कल्पोपपन्नाः कल्पातीताश्च ॥ १७ ॥

Kalpopannakalpatitashcha

(There are of 2 kinds)
Kalpopanna born in the 16 heavens and with 10 grades These alone have 10 classes

Kalpatita born beyond the 16 heavens They have no grades or classes They are called *Ahamindra* अहमिन्द्र (lit 'I am India) and are all alike

SUTRA 18

उपर्युपरि ॥ १८ ॥

Uparyupari

The 16 heavens are situated in pairs one (pair) above the other (The graineyakas are also one above the other beyond the 16 heavens)

SUTRA 19

सौधर्मैशानसानत्कुमारमाहेन्द्रब्रह्मब्रह्मोत्तरलान्तवकापिष्ठशुक्रमहाशुक्रसता-
रसहस्रारेष्वानतप्राणतयोरारणाच्युतयोर्नवसु ग्रैवेयकेषु विजयवैजयन्तजयन्तापरा-
जितेषु सर्वार्थसिद्धौ च ॥ १९ ॥

Saudharmaishana sanatkumara mahendra brahma brahmottra lantava kapistha shukra maha shukra satara sahasraresvanata pranatayo rarana chyutayor navasu graiveyakesu vijaya vaijayanta jayanta parajitesu sarvartha siddhau cha

(They कल्पवासी live) in

1 सौधर्म *Saudharma,* 2 ईशान *Isan* 3 सानत्कुमार, *Sanatkumara* 4 माहेन्द्र *Mahendra,* 5 ब्रह्म *Brahma* 6 ब्रह्मोत्तर *Brahmottara,* 7 लान्तव *Lantava* 8 कापिष्ठ *Kapistha,* 9 शुक्र *Shukra* 10 महाशुक्र *Mahashukra* 11 सतार *Satara* 12 सहस्रार *Sahasrara* 13 आनत *Anat,* 14 प्राणत *Pranata* 15 आरण *Arana and* अच्युत 16 *Achyuta*

(Above these 16 heavens the abodes of अहमिन्द्र *Ahamindras* are)

9 ग्रैवेयक Graiveyaka (heavens ,)
9 अनुदिश Anudisha (,,

5 अनुत्तर Anuttara (heavens i e)

विजय *Vijaya*, वैजयंत, *Vaijayanta* ; जयन्त, *Jayanta* ; अपराजित *Aparajita* ; सर्वार्थसिद्धि *Sarvartha siddhi*

Above the Sarvartha-siddhi is the सिद्धक्षेत्र, *Siddha kshetra* the place of Liberated souls

The first heaven सौधर्म *Saudharama* is the nearest because its central heavenly car or abode (विमान *Vimana*) is only one hair s breadth from the top of the Central Meru (सुदर्शनमेरु) *This Meru is 1 00 040* yojanas high, 1,000 yojanas of it are embedded in the earth, the rest is above the top being 40 yojanas

The कल्पवासी Heavenly have 12 classes because there are 12 Indras in the 16 heavens as follows

The 1 2, 3, 4	heavens have one Indra each i e,	4 Indras named after their heavens
5 6	"	only, i e 1 Brahmednra
7 8	, , ,	1 Lantava
9 10	, " ,	1 Shukra
11, 12	, ,	1 Satara
The 13 14 15, 16	" , ,	4 named after their heavens
	Total Indras	12

The 16 heavens have 52 layers (Patala), i e 31 7 4 2 1 1 respectively for 1st 2nd 3rd 4th, 5th and 6th pairs of heavens ; and 6 for the 7th and the 8th pairs

There are 9 for the 9 Graiveyakas ,
1 9 Anudisas ;
1 , 5 Anuttaras
In all there are 63 layers (Patala)

SUTRA 20

स्थितिप्रभावसुखद्युतिलेश्याविशुद्धीन्द्रियावधिविषयतोऽधिकाः ॥ २० ॥

Sthiti prabhava sukha dyuti lesya vishuddhindriya-vadhi visayatoadhikah

Age power, enjoyment, brilliance purity of lesya (paint and thought colour) sense-faculties visual knowledge—(all) these go on increasing (as we go from the lower to the higher heavens)

SUTRA 21

गतिशरीरपरिग्रहाभिमानतोहीना ॥ २१ ॥

Gati sharira parigraha bhimanato hinah

Moving from place to place height of body attachment to world by objects pride—these (go on) decreasing (as we go up to the higher heavens)

e g in 1 and 2	heavens stature is	7	hands (cubits)
3 and 4	"	6	"
5 and 6 7 and 8	"	5	"
9 and 10 11 and 12	"	4	
13 and 14	"	3½	"
15 and 16	"	3	"

In the 1, 2, 3 ग्रैवेयक, *graiveyaka* stature is 2½ hands
In the 4 5 6 " " 2 hands
In the 7, 8, 9 " " 1½ hands
In the 9 अनुदिश *Anudisha* " 1½ hands
In the 5 अनुत्तरविमान, *Anutra Viman* 1 hand.

SUTRA 22

पीतपद्मशुक्ललेश्याद्वित्रिशेषेषु ॥ २२ ॥

Pita padma shukla leshya dvitri shesesu

(There are) पीत *yellow* पद्म *pink* and शुक्ल *white* लेश्या *lesya* in 2 3 (pairs and) the remaining (heavens)

Yellow (पीत) in 1 and 2 heavens | i e 2 pairs.
Yellow-pink in 3 and 4 " |

Pink in 5 and 6 7 and 8, and 9 and 10
Pink white in 11 and 12 heavens.
White in the rest of the heavens and higher regions

SUTRA 23

प्राग्ग्रैवेयकेभ्य कल्पा ॥ २३ ॥

Praggraiveyakebhyah kalpah

(The heavens) before (we reach) The Graiveyakas (are called) kalpas.

SUTRA 24

ब्रह्मलोकालयालौकान्तिका ॥ २४ ॥

Brahma lokalaya laukantikah

(Having) Brahma loka (is) abode (are) Laukantikas. The Lauk-

antika heavenly beings live in the highest parts of the 5th heaven, called Brahmaloka

These are so called because their connection with loka has come to an end i e in their next incarnation they shall be born as human beings and shall attain Liberation

SUTRA 25

सारस्वतादित्यवह्न्यरुणगर्दतोयतुषिताव्याबाधारिष्टाश्च ॥ २५ ॥

Sarasvataditya vahnyaruna garadatoya tusita vyabadharistascha

(These Laukantikas are of the following 8 classes)

सारस्वत् *Saraswat* आदित्य *Aditya*, वह्नि *Vahni* अरुण *Aruna* गर्दतोय *Gardatoya* तुषित *Tusita*, अव्याबाध *Avyabadha and* अरिष्ट *Arista*

There are 16 more classes 2 in the 8 intervals formed by the above 8 classes In all there are 24 classes The names of their heavens take after them

They are all alike and independent; and without sexual desire and therefore called देवर्षि Devarsi They descend and attend to the Tirtha nkaras when the latter make up their minds to renounce the world

The number of Laukantika celestial being is 4 07,806

SUTRA 26

विजयादिषुद्विचरमा ॥ २६ ॥

Vijayadisu dvicharmah

In the (4 अनुत्तर Anuttara heavens, i e) Vijaya etc, (i e Vijayanta Jayanta, Aparajita and the 9 अनुदिश Anudishas those heavenly beings are born who shall attain Liberation at the most after having incarnated (as a human being) twice

[All these are beings with right belief (सम्यग्दर्शन)]

SUTRA 27

औपपादिकमनुष्येभ्य शेषास्तिर्यग्योनय ॥ २७ ॥

Aupapadika manusyebhyah shesastiry igyonayah

Other than those born by instantaneous rise (i e hellish and celestial beings) and human beings an beings i e, Triyancha तिर्यञ्च

Fine one-sensed sub-humans are found everywhere in the Universe Gross one sensed are also in the whole Universe but not everywhere like the fine one sensed ones The sub-humans from 2 to 5 sensed beings are only in the Mobile Channel (Trasa-nadi)

SUTRA 28

स्थितिरसुरनागसुपर्णद्वीपशेषाणां सागरोपमत्रिपल्योपमार्द्धहीनमिता ॥२८॥

Sthitirasura naga suparna dvipa seshanam sagropam tripalyo-pamarddha hina mitah

The (maximum) age of

असुर *Asura* measures	1	Sagara सागर
नाग *Naga* ,	3	Palya पल्य
सुपर्ण *Suparna* , ½ less (i e 2½)		,
द्वीप *Dvipa*, ,	2	,
and of the other (6 classes)	1½	, ,

SUTRA 29

सौधर्मैशानयो सागरोपमेऽधिके ॥ २९ ॥

Saudharmai shanayoh sagaropame adhike

In the Saudharma and Ishana (i e 1st and 2nd heavens the maximum age is) a little over 2 Sagras

SUTRA 30

सानत्कुमारमाहेन्द्रयो सप्त ॥ ३० ॥

Sanatkumara mahendrayoh sapta

In the Sanatkumar Mahendra (i e 3rd and 4th heavens the maximum age is a little over) 7 sagaras

SUTRA 31

त्रिसप्तनवैकादशत्रयोदशपञ्चदशभिरधिकानि तु ॥ ३१ ॥

Tri sapta navaikadasha trayodasha panchadasha bhira-

9 11 13 and 15 added to (7 sagaras make up the maxi

m s

In the 5th and 6th heavens, it is a little over
, „ 7th 8th , „ „ ,
, 9th , 10th , ,
11th , 12th , , , „ ,
In the 13th and 14th heavens it is 20 sagaras
, , 15th 16th , 22 „

SUTRA 32

मारणाच्युतादूर्ध्वमेकैकेन नवसुग्रैवेयकेषुविजयादिषुसर्वार्थसि-

Aranachyuta durddhva mekaikına navas kesu vijayadısu sarvarthasıddau cha

Above Arana and Achyuta, in the 9 Graiveyakas, more by one sagara (i e it is 23-31 sagaras respective Anudisas (it is 32 sagaras and) in Vijaya etc (in the is 33 sagaras But) in (the last Anuttara, i e.) Sarvart never less than 33 sagras)

SUTRA 33

अपरापल्योपमधिकम् ॥ ३३ ॥

Aparapalyopama madhikam

(In the Saudharma and Ishana the) minimum (age is *one* palya

SUTRA 34

परत परत पूर्वापूर्वानन्तरा ॥ ३४ ॥

Paratah paratah Purvapurva nantarah

Further (and) further (on] the former (or maximu comes the minimum age for the next As for the rest th age for) the immediately preceding [region is the minimu next above it)

SUTP 35

नरकाणां ॥

The same (rule applie

maximum age of the 1st is the minimum) of the 2nd and so on.

SUTRA 36

दशवर्षसहस्राणिप्रथमायाम् ॥ ३६ ॥

Dashavarsa sahasrani prathamayam.

(The minimum age of beings) in the first (hell is) 10000 years

SUTRA 37

भवनेषुच ॥ ३७ ॥

Bhavanesucha

(The minimum age) of Residentials भवनेषु (is also) the same (i e 10,000 years)

SUTRA 38

व्यन्तराणांच ॥ ३८ ॥

Vyantaranamcha

The same for Peripatetics (i e the minimum is 10000 years)

SUTRA 39

परापल्योपममधिकं ॥ ३९ ॥

Para palyopama madhikam

The maximum (age for peripatetics is) a little over one palya

SUTRA 40

ज्योतिष्काणांच ॥ ४० ॥

Jyotiskanam cha

The stellars also (have a maximum of a little over one palya

SUTRA 41

तदष्टभागोऽपरा ॥ ४१ ॥

Tadasta bhago apara

The minimum (for the stellars is) ⅛ of that, (i e, a palya)

SUTRA 42

लौकान्तिकानामष्टौ सागरोपमाणि सर्वेषाम् ॥ ४२ ॥

Laukantikanamastau sagaropamani servesam.

(The age) of the Laukantikas (is) 8 sagaras (It is the same) for all



अध्याय पांचवा

CHAPTER V

SUTRA 1

अजीवकाया धर्माधर्माकाशपुद्गला ॥ १ ॥

Ajivakaya dharma dharmakasha pudgalah

The non soul extensive (substances are)

धर्म *Dharma* medium of motion to soul and matter,

अधर्म *Adharma* rest ,

आकाश *Akasha* space and, and

पुद्गल *Pudgala* matter

काय *Kaya* means extensive i e. having extent like the body i e, occupying more than one प्रदेश *Pradesha* spatial unit or point काल *Kala* times has no extent because its innumerable points kalanus are packed full like a heap of jewels in universal space but are never united one with the other

SUTRA 2

द्रव्याणि ॥ २ ॥

Dravyani

(They are also called) dravyas substances

6 Dravyas The basic distinction is one *It is seen it is undeniable* It is the distiction between *the (the I) and* the chair on which I sit Technically *it is* the distinction between Jiva and Ajiva It is perfect in Logic and universally observable in experience

Grouped round both of these *and making these two* knowable and describable are time and pace Time and space are not one *Similarly the motion or rest—which are* also observable in men and matter—are not one, though there is nothing which *is neither at rest,* not in motion. Each condition *is a condition of rest or* motion.

Thus we get *Jiva soul, Ajiva* non-soul including matter, time space *media of motion and of rest.*

Substance is a group of attributes which are never separable one from the other *It is like a lump of* atom

of which has all the attributes of sugar, sweetness, crystallisation whiteness, etc

There are 6 such groups

There is no attribute outside of these 6 groups

Every substance has an infinity of attributes in it

The full attributes of no substance can be given

Attributes are in all the parts and modification of a substance i e of a group of attributes

सामान्यगुण *Samanya guna* or common attributes *are found in all* substances ; these are the attributes which are necessary for the existence of the group as a group

These are infinite but 6 are principal

अस्तित्व 1 *Astitva* Isness, Indestructibility ; permanence ; the capacity by which substance cannot be destroyed

वस्तुत्व 2 *Vastutva* Functionality ; capacity by which substance *has a Function*

द्रव्यत्व 3 *Dravyatva*, Changeability, capacity by which it is always changing its modifications

प्रमेयत्व 4 *Prameyatva* Knowability capacity of being known by some one or of being the subject-matter of knowledge

अगुरुलघुत्व 5 *Aguru laghutva* Individuality ; capacity by which one attribute or substance does not become another and the substance does not lose its attributes whose grouping forms the substance itself 1

प्रदेशत्व 6 *Pradeshatva* Spatiality capacity of having some kind of form.

चेतनत्व *Chetanatva* Consciousness
अमूर्तत्व *Amurtatva* Immateriality
} are common attributes of the class of *substance or group of* attributes called soul

अचेतनत्व *Achetanatva* Unconsciousness
अमूर्तत्व *Amurtatva* Immateriality
} are common to space, motion and rest and time

अचेतनत्व *Achetanatva* Unconsciousness
मूर्तत्व *Murtatva* Materiality
} are common to Matter

विशेषगुण *Vishesa guna* or special attributes of a particular substance These are the attributes which distinguish one group from the others

Modifications occur only in attributes

Substance and Attribute are distinguishable according to their name number, differentia and function *i e* respectively, Sanjna Sankhya Laksana Prayojana (संज्ञा संख्या लक्षण, प्रयोजन)

The bottom reality is attributes But always in 6 groups.

काय *Kaya* is that which has extent, i e many प्रदेश *Pardeshas*, i e occupies more than one unit of space Kala time, alone does not do so Therefore is not kaya or extensive the units of time i e Kalanus, कालाणु, are packed in Loka like a heap of jewels (रत्नराशि के समान)

विशेषगुण *Visesha guna* or special attributes of each substance are

(1) जीव *Jiva* soul—1 Knowledge (ज्ञान) (In its full form it arises only in the absence of knowledge-obscuring karma)

2 Conation (दर्शन) (In its full form it arises only in the absence of Conation obscuring karma)

3 Bliss (सुख) In its full form it arises only in the absence of all the 4 destructive karma)

4 Power (वीर्य) (In its full form it arises only in the absence of obstructive karmas etc)

5 Right Belief (सम्यग्दर्शन)
6 Right Conduct (सम्यक्चारित्र)
{In its full form it arises only in the absence of deluding karma

7 अव्याबाध Avyavadha Undisturbable, due to the absence of Vedaniya (Feeling) karma; neither pleasure nor pain.

8 अवगाह *Avagaha* due to the absence of body karma

9 अगुरुलघुत्व *Agurulaghutva* due to the absence of family-karma

10 सूक्ष्मत्व , *Suksmatva* due to the absence of age

The first 6 are अनुजीवी *Anujivi* attributes which co-exist in and constitute the substance

They arise fully only on the destruction of 4th destructive karmas; conation and knowledge obscuring , Deluding and obstructive.

The last 4 are *Pratijivi* (प्रतिजीवी) attributes which merely indicate the absence of their opposites

They arise fully on the destruction of the 4 अघातिया non-destructive karmas वेदनीय, *Vedaniya*, Feeling, आयु age, गोत्र family and नाम body karmas.

(2) पुद्गल, *Pudgala* matter Special attributes are
  1. Touch, स्पर्श;
  2. Taste, रस ;
  3. Smell, गंध ; and
  4. Colour, वर्ण
(3) धर्म *Dharma* medium of motion
(4) अधर्म *Adharma* medium of Rest
(5) आकाश , *Akasha*, space; its function is to give place to others
(6) काल *Kala* Time , it brings about modifications

SUTRA 3

जीवाश्च ॥ ३ ॥

Jivashcha

Jivas (or souls are) also (substances and extensive ones)

SUTRA 4

नित्यावस्थितान्यरूपाणि ॥ ४ ॥

Nitya vasthitanya rupani

(The above 5 extensive substances are) permanent in their nature, (and with काल *Kala* time are) fixed (as the sole constituents of the Universe,) (and are) devoid of touch taste smell and colour (i e are अरूपी *Arupi*).

SUTRA 5

पुद्गला : ॥ ५ ॥

h taste, smell and colour)
is used to indicate that
of matter]

) one

SUTRA 7

निष्क्रियाणि च ॥ ७ ॥

Niskriyani cha

(These three are) not (capable of) moving (from place to place) Time substance also is incapable of motion. It is also Niskriya

SUTRA 8

असंख्येयाः प्रदेशा धर्माधर्मैकजीवानाम् ॥ ८ ॥

Asankhyeyah pradeshas dharmadharmaika jivanam

(There are) innumerable Pradeshas of Dharma, Adharma and each soul

(A Pradesha is the unit of space occupied by an atom of matter) The number of Pradeshas in Dharma Adharma a Soul and Lokakasa *i e* the Universe (*i e* all except pure space) is the same *i e* it is innumerable (in all)

The soul fills the whole Universe only in Omniscient overflow Otherwise it is extent equal to its mundane body except in the Overflow (Samudghata) See Dravya Samgraha Gatha 10 Vol I S B J 28-31

SUTRA 9

आकाशस्यानन्ताः ॥ ९ ॥

Akashasya nantah

(The Pradeshas) of space (are) infinite

SUTRA 10

संख्येयाऽसंख्येयाश्च पुद्गलानाम् ॥ १० ॥

Sankhyeya asankhyeyascha pudgalanam

(The atoms) of matter (are) numerable (संख्यात *Sankhyata*) innumerable (असंख्यात *Asankhyata*) and अनन्त *Ananta*, infinite (according to their different molecular compositions

One atom of matter, if free occupies a unit of space *i e* a Pradesha Infinite atoms will imply infinite Pradeshas of matter in Lokakasa But this only if they are all free *i e* the whole matter of the Universe exists only in atomic form This it does not There

fore there is no real contradiction between this and the 8th Sutra, because a molecule of *e g*, 3 atoms of matter may occupy less space than is represented by 3 Pradeshas, which would be necessary for the 3 atoms in their free condition The material atoms have the capacity of compressing an infinite number of themselves into one molecule which may not occupy more than one Pradesha

This may be illustrated roughly A saccharim pill compresses the sweetness of many lumps of sugar in it In the form of the pill, those lumps occupy much less space than otherwise As the space in a room may be occupied by the light of one lamp and also by 50 other lamps if they are brought there

SUTRA 11

नाणो ॥ ११ ॥

Nanoh

(There are)no (unmerable Pradeshas) of an atom

An atom occupies always one Pradesha It follows from the definition of Pradesha

SUTRA 12

लोयाकासेऽवगाह ॥ १२ ॥

Lokakasheavagahah

The place (of these substances is only) in the Lokakasa Universe

This division into universe and non universe (loka and aloka) is based on Dharma and Adharma Souls and matter move on and rest up to the confines of the Universe only

SUTRA 13

धर्माधर्मया कृत्स्ने ॥ १३ ॥

Dharmadharmayoh kritsne

Of Dharma and Adharma (tne place is) in the whole (Universe)

SUTRA 14

एकप्रदेशादिषु भाज्य पुदगलानाम् ॥ १४ ॥

Eka pradeshadisu bhajyah pudgalanam

In one pradesha space (in 2 pradeshas-space, in 3 pradesha-space),

etc (upto lokakasa i e the universe only 1, 2 or 3 etc atoms) of matter (will find) distribution of place (if they are in a free condition but in a molecular form any number of atoms can occupy any one of those spaces)

SUTRA 15

असंख्येयभागादिषु जीवानाम् ॥ १५ ॥

Asankhyeya bhagadisu jivanam

[The soul even in its lowest condition occupies innumerable pradeshas This is not in conflict with the saying that (लोकाकाश) *Lokakasa* has innumerable pradeshas because innumerable may apply to a large number and to a still larger and larger number So if the Universe (Lokakasa) is divided into innumerable parts each part also has got innumerable pradeshas.] (The place) of souls (is) in one or more of (these) innumerable parts

Souls have five (सूक्ष्म *suksma*) or dense (बादर *badara*) bodies Fine bodies can pass through dense bodies And the space occupied by one dense bodied soul gives place to an infinite number of fine bodied souls

SUTRA 16

प्रदेशसंहार विसर्पाभ्यां प्रदीपवत् ॥ १६ ॥

Pradesha samhara visarpabhyam pradipavat

By the contraction and expansion of the pradeshas (the soul although it always has innumerable pradeshas occupies space) like the light from a lamp (e g a soul can occupy the space represented by an ant or an elephant or even the महामच्छ *Mahamachchha* found in the स्वयंभूरमण *Svayambhuramana* the outermost ocean of our Universe and of which the length is 1000 yojanas This is the biggest body in existence The smallest is that of a fine nigoda soul which is aparyapta i e incapable of full development The souls that occupy body die and reborn 18 times in the time taken by one beat of the average human pulse Thus it is like a lamp which lights a small room and also a larger one Light vibrations expand more in the larger than in the small room)

SUTRA 17

गतिस्थित्युपग्रहौ धर्माधर्मयोरुपकारः ॥ १७ ॥

Gati sthityupagrahau dharmadharmayorupakarah

Supporting the motion and rest (of soul and matter is) the function of Dharma and Adharma respectively

SUTRA 18

आकाशस्यावगाहः ॥ १८ ॥

Akashasyavagahah

(The function) of Space (Akasa is to give) place (to all the other substances)

SUTRA 19

शरीरवाङ्मनः प्राणापानाः पुद्गलानाम् ॥ १९ ॥

Sharira vanmanah pranapanah Pudgalanam

(The function) of matter (is to form the basis of the) bodies, speech and mind and respiration of souls

There are 23 kinds of molecules or varganas The 5 bodies are made of 3 and speech and mind each of one, kinds See Jiva Kanda 606-7

SUTRA 20

सुखदुःखजीवितमरणोपग्रहाश्च ॥ २० ॥

Sukha duhkha jivita maranopagrahascha.

(The function of matter is) also to make possible in the soul wordly enjoyment, pain life (and) death. [This must be so as all karmas are material] Matter also affects matter Therefore उपग्रह *Upagraha* is used in the Sutra

SUTRA 21

परस्परोपग्रहो जीवानाम् ॥ २१ ॥

Parasparopagraho jivanam

(The function) of souls (i e mundane souls it to) support each other

This is obvious. We all depend upon one another The peasant provides corn to humanity the weaver clothes ; and so on.

SUTRA 22

वर्तनापरिणामक्रियाः परत्वापरत्वे च कालस्य ॥ २२ ॥

Vartanaparinamakriyah paratvaparatve cha kalasya

And (the function) of Time (is to help substances in their) being

(in their continuing to exist i e in the continuous change in their attributes at every moment) (in their) modifying (in their) movement, (and in their) long and short duration

The being or continuing to exist is done by निश्चयकाल *Nischaya-kala* i e, real time substance

The other three functions are the basis of व्यवहारकाल *Vyavahara-kala* i e, of time from a practical point of view which is based upon the motion of matter sun moon earth etc. in space

SUTRA 23

स्पर्शरसगन्धवर्णवन्तः पुद्गलाः ॥ २३ ॥

Sparsharasagandhavarnavantah pudgalah

Material (substances) are possessed of touch taste smell and colour—matter is in the form of an atom (Anu) or a molecule (Skandha) Touch taste smell and colour are respectively of 8 5 2 and 5 kinds. An atom has only 5 of these 20 at a time i e one each of taste smell and colour and 2 of touch hot or cold and smooth or rough A molecule has 7 one each of taste smell and colour and 4 of touch, hot or cold smooth or rough hard or soft and heavy or light.

SUTRA 24

शब्दबन्धसौक्ष्म्यस्थौल्यसंस्थानभेदतमश्छायातपोद्योतवन्तश्च ॥ २४ ॥

Shabdabandhasauksmyasthaulyasamsthanabhedatamashch hayatapodyotavantashcha

And they (material substances) are possessed of (i e their mani festations take the form of)

शब्द *Shabda* sound, like vocal sounds music etc.

Note —Sound is produced by one group of molecules striking against another group as a hand striking the stretched skin on a kettle drum this is the external cause of sound but the sound affects the vocal molecules which fill the whole universe they are set *in motion* and bring the sounds to out sense of hearing it is the internal cause

Sound is of two kinds

(1) वैस्रसिक *Vaisresika*—produced by nature alone as thunder, roar of ocean thunder of clouds etc.

(2) प्रायोगिक *Prayogika*—produced in connection with men, etc
Sound is also divided into two—

(1) अभाषात्मक *Abhasatmaka*—unspoken or which is not uttered by mouth This is—

(1) प्रायोगिक *Prayogika*—caused by men etc
as (1) तत *Tata*—sounds from stringed instruments as vina, etc.
(2) वितत *Vitata*—sounds from drum, kettle drum, etc
(3) घन *Ghana*—Sound from cymbals kartala, etc
(4) सुषिर *Susira*—sound from flute etc
and (5) वैशेषिक *Vaishesika*—caused by nature spontaneously as thunder etc.

(2) भाषात्मक *Bhasatmaka*—spoken or speech uttered with the mouth, speech.

It is of two kinds
1 अनक्षरात्मक *Anaksaratmaka*—non-alphabetical or the speech of animals having 2 or more senses,
2. अक्षरात्मक *Aksaratmaka*—alphabetical as Sanskrit prakrita and various other Aryan on non-aryan languages

Note —For further details vide Dravya Samgraha Vol I of S B J Appendix page lviii

बन्ध *Bandha*, union caused by man or otherwise, like chemical changes in clouds, electricity etc

सौक्ष्म्य *Sauksmya* fineness; like light compared with a table;
स्थौल्य, *Sthaulya*, grossness, *e g*, iron or wood compared with water;

संस्थान *Sansthana* figure; geometrical and other diagrams;
भेद *Bheda* partibility; like split peas flour or gold leaf from gold etc

तम *Tama* darkness,
छाया *Chhaya* shade;
आतप *Atapa* sun-shine; and
उद्योत, *Udyota* moon light

SUTRA 25

अणवः स्कन्धाश्च ॥ २५ ॥

Anava skandhascha

(Matter has 2 chief forms) atom and molecule

SUTRA 26

भेदसङ्घातेभ्य उत्पद्यन्ते ॥ २६ ॥

Bhedasanghatebhya utpadyante

(Molecules) are formed (in 3 ways)

(1) By division ; (as a penny cut into its smallest possible pieces. Each piece will retain the composition of the matter of the penny)

(2) By fusion (as a drop of water from 2 parts of hydrogen and one of oxygen.

(3) By both, (i e, a mixed process of division and fusion, as in cooking.)

SUTRA 27

भेदादणु ॥ २७ ॥

Bhedadanuh

Atom (is obtained only) by division (to an infinite extent.)

SUTRA 28

भेदसघाताभ्या चाक्षुष ॥ २८ ॥

Bhedasanghatabhyam chaksusah

(Molecules can sometimes be decomposed) into (their) visible parts by division and union e g marsh gas treated with chlorine gives methyl chloride and hydrochloric acid The formula is

$CH_4+cl_2 = CH_3cl+H+cl$. [P 27 of Organic Chemistry People's Books.]

SUTRA 29

सद्द्रव्यलक्षणम् ॥ २९ ॥

Saddravyalaksanam

The differentia of substance (is) sat being or isness

SUTRA 30

उत्पादव्ययध्रौव्ययुक्त सत् ॥ ३० ॥

Utpadavyayadhrauvyayuktam sat

Sat (is a) simultaneous possession

(of) उत्पाद, *Utpada*, coming into existence birth;
व्यय, *Vyaya*, going out of existence, decay; and
ध्रौव्य *Dhrauvya* continuous sameness of existence permanence.

The meaning is that the substance remains the same but its condition always changes *e g* a man is in anger and forgiveness supervenes, his angry soul is replaced by a *forgiving one i. e* the forgiving *condition* comes into existence at the same time as anger goes out of existence; and all through *the soul continues the same* उत्पाद *Utpada* and व्यय *Vyaya* are of 2 kinds

स्वनिमित्त *Svanimitta* in the pure substance itself due to modification in the attribute of individuality अगुरुलघुत्व *Agurulaghutva*, on account of the substance Time and परनिमित्त *Paranimitta* modification in the impure substance with the auxiliary help of another substance *e g* in धर्म *Dharma* and अधर्म *Adharma* आकाश *Akasha* and काल *Kala*, which have only स्वनिमित्त *Svanimitta* kind of Utpada and Vyaya The maturity of karmas is the paranimitta (by the shedding of some karmic matter) of a change in the thought activity of the soul

SUTRA 31

तद्भावव्ययं नित्यम् ॥ ३१ ॥

Tadbhavavyayam nityam

'Permanence (means) indestructibility of the essence (or quality) of the substance

SUTRA 32

अर्पितानर्पितसिद्धेः ॥ ३२ ॥

Arpitanarpitasiddheh.

The determination (of substances is done by) giving prominence (to their indestructible essence and giving a) secondary place (to their changeable condition as it is necessary for their full consideration because the permanent and the changeable aspect, though existing simultaneously cannot be described simultaneously

Similarly *in* other pairs of contradictory characteristics one must receive primary and the other secondary consideration.

SUTRA 33

स्निग्धरूक्षत्वाद्बन्धः ॥ ३३ ॥

Snigdharuksatvadvandhah

(The atoms of matter) unite (or become one to form a molecule) in virtue of their qualities of smoothness and roughness. Smooth can unite with smooth; rough with rough; or smooth and rough with each other.

SUTRA 34

न जघन्यगुणानाम् ॥ ३४ ॥

Na jaghanyagunanam

(There is) no (union of atoms) with an atom with the minimum degree (of smoothness or roughness to form a molecule.)

SUTRA 35

गुणसाम्ये सदृशानाम् ॥ ३५ ॥

Gunasamye sadrisanam

(Atoms) with equal degree (of smoothness or roughness) of the (condition i.e. smoothness or roughness cannot unite with an atom of their own or of the opposite condition.)

SUTRA 36

द्व्यधिकादिगुणानां तु ॥ ३६ ॥

Dvyadhikadi gunanam tu

But (atoms) of 2 or more degrees can unite.)

An atom will unite when there is a difference of 2 degrees of smoothness or roughness between it and the atom with which it can unite. Thus an atom with 2 degrees can unite with an atom with 4 degrees of smoothness or roughness but neither less nor more. Thus it cannot unite with an atom with 3 or 5 or more degrees; of course it cannot unite with an atom with 2 degrees or one degree under Sutras 35 and 34 respectively.

SUTRA 37

बन्धेऽधिकौ पारिणामिकौ च ॥ ३७ ॥

Bandheadhikau parinamikau cha

In the union (the atom) with a higher degree (of smoothness or roughness) absorbs (the one with the lower degree into itself.)

SUTRA 38

गुणपर्ययवद्द्रव्यम् ॥ ३८ ॥

Gunaparyayavadravyam

Substance is possessed of attributes and modifications

गुण Attributes are अन्वयी Anvayi, i e, they co-exist with substance

पर्याय, Modifications are व्यतिरेकी Vyatireki, i e, they succeed each other

SUTRA 39

कालश्च ॥ ३९ ॥

Kalascha

Kala or Time (is) also (a substance)

SUTRA 40

सोऽनन्तसमयः ॥ ४० ॥

So nuntasamayah

That (Time has) infinite Samayas Samaya is the modification of time समय *Samaya* is the time taken by the smallest particle of matter in going from one point of time to the next point called कालाणु *Kalanu*

SUTRA 41

द्रव्याश्रया निर्गुणा गुणाः ॥ ४१ ॥

Drvyasraya nirguna gunah

(Gunas or) attributes depend upon substance (and are never without it An attribute as such) cannot be the subtratum of another attribute (although of course many attributes can co exist in one and the same substance at one and the same time and place) There cannot be an attribute of an attribute

SUTRA 42

तद्भावः परिणामः ॥ ४२ ॥

Tadbhavah parinamah

The becoming of that (is) modification परिणाम *Parinama* or modification of a substance is the change in the character of its attributes.

अध्याय छहवां

CHAPTER VI

SUTRA 1

कायवाङमन कम योग ॥ १ ॥

Kayavau nanahkarma yogah

Yoga (is the name of vibrations set in the soul by) the activity of body speech or mind

योग *Yoga* is the name of a faculty of the soul itself, to attract matter, under the influence of past karmas The activity of mind body and speech brings this faculty into play

काययोग *Kaya yoga* is caused by the क्षयोपशम *Ksayopshama* destruction-subsidence of वीर्यान्तराय *Viryantaraya* power obstructive karmas and by the support of material molecules of the different kinds of bodies

वचनयोग *Vachana yoga* is caused by the operation of the body-karma and by the destruction subsidence of power obstructive and knowledge obscuring karmas and by the support of vocal molecules.

मनयोग *Manayoga* is caused by the destruction subsidence of knowledge-obscuring and obstructive karmas, and by the spuport of the molecules, which go to form mind

SUTRA 2

स आस्रव ॥ २ ॥

Sa asravah

This (yoga) is the channel of Asrava (or inflow of karmic matter into the soul.)

SUTRA 3

शुभ पुण्यस्याशुभ पापस्य ॥ ३ ॥

Subhah punyasyasubhah papasya

Asrava is of 2 kinds) शुभ *Shubha* or good (which is the inlet) of virtue or meritorious karmas; अशुभ *Ashubha* or bad (which is the inlet of vice or demeritorious karmas)

SUTRA 38

गुणपर्ययवद्द्रव्यम् ॥ ३८ ॥

Gunaparyayavadravyam

Substance is possessed of attributes and modifications

गुण Attributes, are अन्वयी *Anvayi, i e* they co-exist with substance

पर्याय, Modifications are व्यतिरेकी *Vyatireki i e*, they succeed each other

SUTRA 39

कालश्च ॥ ३९ ॥

Kalascha

Kala or Time (is) also (a substance)

SUTRA 40

सोऽनन्तसमय ॥ ४० ॥

So nuntasamayah

That (Time has) infinite Samayas. Samaya is the modification of time समय *Samaya* is the time taken by the smallest particle of matter in going from one point of time to the next point called कालाणु *Kalanu*

SUTRA 41

द्रव्याश्रया निर्गुणा गुणा ॥ ४१ ॥

Drvyasraya nirguna gunah

(Gunas or) attributes depend upon substance (and are never without it An attribute as such) cannot be the subtratum of another attribute (although of course many attributes can co-exist in one and the same substance at one and the same time and place) There cannot be an attribute of an attribute

SUTRA 42

तद्भाव परिणाम ॥ ४२ ॥

Tadbhavah parinamah

The becoming of that (is) modification परिणाम *Parinama* or modification of a substance is the change in the character of its attributes.

अध्याय छहवां

CHAPTER VI

SUTRA 1

कायवाङ्मनः कर्म योगः ॥ १ ॥

Kayavau nanahkarma yogah

Yoga (is the name of vibrations set in the soul by) the activity of body speech or mind

योग *Yoga* is the name of a faculty of the soul itself to attract matter under the influence of past karmas The activity of mind body and speech brings this faculty into play

काययोग, *Kaya yoga* is caused by the क्षयोपशम *Ksayopshama* destruction-subsidence of वीर्यान्तराय *Viryantaraya* power obstructive karmas and by the support of material molecules of the different kinds of bodies

वचनयोग *Vachana yoga* is caused by the operation of the body-karma and by the destruction subsidence of power obstructive and knowledge-obscuring karmas and by the support of vocal molecules

मनयोग *Manayoga* is caused by the destruction-subsidence of knowledge obscuring and obstructive karmas, and by the spuport of the molecules, which go to form mind

SUTRA 2

स आस्रव ॥ २ ॥

Sa asravah

This (yoga) is the channel of Asrava (or inflow of karmic matter into the soul)

SUTRA 3

शुभ पुण्यस्याशुभ पापस्य ॥ ३ ॥

Subhah punyasyasubhah papasya

Asrava is of 2 kinds) शुभ *Shubha* or good (which is the inlet) of virtue or meritorious karmas, अशुभ *Ashubha* or bad (which is the inlet of vice or demeritorious karmas)

SUTRA 4

सकषायोकषाययो साम्परायिकेर्यापथयो ॥ ४ ॥

Sakasayakasayayoh samparayikeryapathayoh

(Souls) affected with the passions (have) साम्परायिक *Samparayika* or mundane (inflow i e, inflow of karmic matter which causes the cycle of births and rebirths Those) without the passions (have) ईर्यापथ, *Iryapatha*, transient or fleeting (inflow) Mundane inflow is in the first ten and transient inflow in the 11th 12th and 13th stages (Gunasthana) There is no inflow in the 14th stage

SUTRA 5

इन्द्रियकषायाव्रतक्रिया पञ्चचतुःपञ्चपञ्चविंशतिसंख्या पूर्वस्य भेदा ॥५॥

Indriyakasayavratakriyah panchachatuhpanchapanchvinsatis-ankhyahpurvasya bhedah

The kinds of the first (i e mundane inflow are 39 in) number
(5 Caused by the activity of the) 5 Senses इन्द्रिय;
(4 , ,) 4 Passions कषाय,
(5 , , ,) 5 (Kinds of) vowlessness अव्रत
(25) 25 (kinds of) activity क्रिया (as follows)

(1) सम्यक्त्वक्रिया Samyaktva-kriya that which strengthens right belief e g worship, etc;

(2) मिथ्यात्वक्रिया Mithyatva-kriya that which strengthens wrong belief e g superstition etc.

(3) प्रयोगक्रिया Prayoga kriya, bodily movement

(4) समादानक्रिया Samadana-kriya tendency to neglect vows after having taken them

(5) ईर्यापथक्रिया Iryapatha kriya walking carefully by looking on the ground (for living beings which may be trod upon and thus injured)

(6) प्रादोषिकीक्रिया, Pradosiki kriya tendency to accuse others in anger;

(7) कायिकीक्रिया Kayiki-kriya a wicked man s readiness to hurt others,

(8) अधिकरणिकीक्रिया Adhikaraniki-kriya having weapons of hurtfulness

(9) पारितापिकी क्रिया Paritapiki kriya any thing which may cause mental pain to oneself or others ;

(10) प्राणातिपातिकी क्रिया Pranatipatiki kriya depriving another of vitalities of age sense-organs powers and respiration ;

(11) दर्शनक्रिया Darshana-kriya infatuated desire to see a pleasing form ;

(12) स्पर्शनक्रिया Sparshana kriya frivolous-indulgence in touching

(13) प्रात्ययिकी क्रिया Pratyayiki-kriya inventing new sense enjoyments ;

(14) समन्तपातनक्रिया Samantapatana kriya answering call of nature in a place frequented by men women and animals ;

(15) अनाभोगक्रिया Anabhoga kriya indifference in dropping things or throwing oneself down upon the earth i.e. without seeing whether it is swept or not

(16) स्वहस्तक्रिया Svahasta kriya undertaking to do by one s own hand what should be done by others ;

(17) निसर्गक्रिया Nisarga kriya admiration of hurtful or unrighteous things ;

(18) विदारणक्रिया Vidarana-kriya proclaiming other s sins ;

(19) आज्ञाव्यापादिकीक्रिया Ajna vyapadiki kriya misinterpreting the scriptural injunctions which we do not want to follow ;

(20) अनाकांक्षक्रिया Anakanks-kriya disrespect to scriptural injunctions out of vice or laziness ;

(21) प्रारम्भक्रिया Prarambha-kriya, engaging in harmful activities or expressing delight in other s misdeeds ;

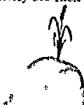
(22) पारिग्राहिकी क्रिया, Parigrahiki kriya trying to persevere in one s attachment to worldly belongings ;

(23) मायाक्रिया Maya kriya deceitful disturbance of some one s right knowledge and faith ;

(24) मिथ्यादर्शनक्रिया Mithya-darshan kriya praising actions due to wrong belief ; and

(25) अप्रत्याख्यानक्रिया *Apratyakhyana kriya* not renouncing what ought to be renounced

Note that the Senses Passions and Vowlessness are the causes and the 25 kinds of activity are their effects



SUTRA 6

तीव्रमन्दज्ञाताज्ञातभावाधिकरणवीर्यविशेषेभ्यस्तद्विशेषः ॥ ६ ॥

Tivramandajnatajnatabhavadhikaranaviryavishesebhyasta dvishesah

The differences in inflow (in different souls caused by the same activity arise) from differences in (the following)

(1) तीव्रभाव Intensity of desire or thought-activity
(4) मन्दभाव Mildness
(3) ज्ञातभाव Intentional character (of the act)
(4) अज्ञातभाव, Unintentional character (of the act)
(5) अधिकरण Dependence.
(6) वीर्य (one's own position and) power (to do the act)

SUTRA 7

अधिकरणं जीवाऽजीवाः ॥ ७ ॥

Adhikaranam jivaajivah

The "Dependence' (relates to) the souls (and) the non-souls.

SUTRA 8

आद्यं संरम्भसमारम्भारम्भयोगकृतकारितानुमतकषायविशेषैस्त्रिस्त्रिस्त्रिश्चतुश्चैकशः ॥ ८ ॥

Adyam samrambhasamarambhayogakritakaritanumatakasaya vishesaistristristrishchatushchaikashah

The first जीवाधिकरण (i e, dependence on the souls is of 108) kinds (due to) differences (in the following)

1 संरम्भ *Samrambha* Determination (to do a thing)
2. समारम्भ *Samarambha*, Preparation (for it), i e, collecting materials for it
3 आरम्भ, *Arambha* commencement (of it.)

(These) three (can be done by the) (three योग yogas (i e activity of mind body and speech thus there are 3×3 = 9 kinds Each one of the 9 kinds can be done in) three (ways i e) by doing oneself, or having it done by others or by approval or acquiescence (Thus we get 27 kinds Each one of the 27 may be due to) the 4 Passions (That gives us 27×4 = 108 kinds Thus the Jain rosary has 108 beads one for each of these 108 Jivadhikaranas

These 108 kinds can become of 432 kinds if we consider each Passion in its 4 aspects of अनन्तानुबन्धी Error feeding अप्रत्याख्यान Partial vow preventing प्रत्याख्यान Total vow preventing and संज्वलन Perfect right conduct-preventing.)

SUTRA 9

निवर्तनानिक्षेपसंयोगनिसर्गा द्विचतुर्द्वित्रिभेदा परम् ॥ ९ ॥

Nirvartananiksepasamyoganisarga dvichaturdvitribhedah param

The other अजीवाधिकरण (i e Dependence on the non soul is of the following 11 kinds)

2 (kinds of) निर्वर्तना, Production [(1) मूलगुण Mulaguna of the body, speech mind and respiration, (2) उत्तरगुण *Uttaraguna*, of books pictures statues, etc.]

4 (kinds of) निक्षेप Putting down [a thing (1) अप्रत्यवेक्षित *Apratyaveksita* without seeing, (2) दुःप्रमृष्ट *Duhpramrista*, petulantly, peevishly, (3) सहसा *Sahasa*, hurriedly and (4) अनाभोग *Anabhoga*, where it ought not to be put.]

2 (*kinds of*) संयोग *mixing up* [(1) भक्तपान *Bhakta-pana* food and drink (2) उपकरण *Upkarana* mixing up of things necessary for doing any act.]

3 (kinds of) निसर्ग movement [by (1) काय *Kaya* body, (2) वचन *Vanga* speech and (3) मन *Mana* mind.]

11 Total.

SUTRA 10

तत्प्रदोषनिन्हवमात्सर्यान्तरायासादनोपघाता ज्ञानदर्शनावरणयो

Tatpradosa ninhava matsaryantarayasadanopaghata jnanadarshanavaranayoh

(1) प्रदोष Depreciation of the learned (scriptures.)

(2) निन्हव, Concealment of knowledge

(3) मात्सर्य Envy, jealousy *Refusal to impart knowledge* out of envy

(4) अन्तराय, Obstruction Hindering the progress of knowledge

(5) आसादना Denying the truth proclaimed by another by body and speech

(6) उपघात, Refuting the truth although it is known to be such

SUTRA 11

दु खशोकतापाक्रन्दनवधपरिवदनान्यात्मपरोभयस्थान्यसद्वेद्यस्य ॥ ११ ॥

Duhkhashokatapakrandanabadhaparivedananyatmaparobha yasthanyasadvedyasya

(The inflow) of pain bringing-feeling (असातावेदनीय *Asata-vedaniya*) karmic matter (is due to the following)

(1) दुःख *Duhkha* pain (2) शोक *shoka*, sorrow (3) ताप *tapa*, repentence, remorse (4) आक्रन्दन *Akrandana*, weeping (5) वध *badha*, depriving of vitality (6) परिदेवना *parivedna* piteous or pathetic moaning to attract compassion

(These 6 can be produced) in ones own self in another or both (in one self and another Thus there are 18 forms of this inflow

SUTRA 12

भूतव्रत्यनुकम्पादानसरागसंयमादियोगः क्षान्तिः शौचमिति सद्वेद्यस्य ॥१२॥

Bhutavratyanu kampadanasaragasamyamadiyogah ksanti shauchamiti sadvedyasya

(1) भूतानुकम्पा *Bhutanukampa* compassion for all living beings (2) व्रत्यनुकम्पा *vratyanukampa* compassion for the vowers (3) दान *Dana* charity (4) सरागसंयम *saraga-samyama* self-control with slight attachment, etc [i e (5) संयमासंयम *samyamasamyama* restrain by vows of some but not of other passions (6) अकामनिर्जरा *Akama-nirjara* equanimous submission to the fruition of karma (7) बालतप *Balatapa* austerities not based upon right knowledge] (8) योग *Yoga* contemplation (9) क्षान्ति *Ksanti* forgiveness and (10) शौच *Shaucha* contentment—these (are the cause of inflow) of pleasure bearing feeling karmic matter, (सातावेदनीय *Sata vedaniya*)

SUTRA 13

केवलिश्रुतसंघधर्मदेवावर्णवादो दर्शनमोहस्य ॥ १३ ॥

Kevalishrutasanghadharmadevavarnavadodarshanamohasya

(The inflow) of दर्शनमोहनीय (*Darshanmohaniya*) right-belief-deluding karmic matter (is caused by) अवर्णवाद *avarnavada* defaming the Omniscient Lord अरहत् *Arhat* (i e केवलि) *Kevali* the Scriptures (श्रुत) *Shruta* the Saint's brother-hoods (संघ) *Sangha* the true religion (धर्म)

Dharma and the Celestial beings (देव *devah*) e g saying that the celestial beings take meat or wine, etc and to offer these as sacrifices to them

SURTA 14

कषायोदयात्तीव्रपरिणामश्चारित्रमोहस्य ॥ १४ ॥

Kasayodayattivraparinamashcharitramohasya

(The inflow) of चरित्रमोहनीय right conduct-deluding karmic matter (is caused by the) intense thought-activity produced by the rise of the passions (and of the quasi passions no-kasaya)

e g Joking about Truth etc disinclination to take vows etc. indulging in evil society etc

SUTRA 15

बह्वारम्भपरिग्रहत्वं नारकस्यायुषः ॥१५ ॥

Bahvarambhaparigrahatvam narakasyayusah

(As to the age karma) the inflow of नरकायुकर्म *narakayukarma* hellishage karma (is caused by too) much wordly activity and by attachment to (too) many worldly objects or by (too) much attachment

e g committing breaches of the first five vows of non killing truth non stealing chastity non-attachment to worldly possessions.

SUTRA 16

माया तैर्यग्योनस्य ॥ १६ ॥

Maya tairyagyonasya,

(The inflow) of तिर्यग्योनि *tiryagyoni* sub-human age karma (is caused by) माया *Maya* deceit

e g cheating others preaching the false doctrine etc

SUTRA 17

अल्पारम्भपरिग्रहत्वं मानुषस्य ॥ १७ ॥

(The inflow) of मनुष्यायु *manusyayu* human age karma (is caused by) slight worldly activity and by attachment to a few worldly objects of by slight attachment

SUTRA 18

स्वभावमार्दवं च ॥ १८ ॥

Svabhava mardavacha

Natural humble disposition is also the cause of human-age karma (मनुष्यायुष्क).

SUTRA 19

निःशीलव्रतत्वं च सर्वेषाम् ॥ १९ ॥

Nihshilvratatvam cha Sarvesam

Vowlessness and sub vowlessness with (slight worldly activity and slight attachment) (is cause of inflow) of all (kinds of age-karmas)

Not taking the vows of laymen and not odopting the restrictions (शील *shila*), but having slight attachment to the world and activity in it can be the cause of the inflow of age karmic matter of all four kinds

SUTRA 20

सरागसंयमसंयमासंयमाकामनिर्जराबालतपांसि दैवस्य ॥ २० ॥

Saragasamsamasamyama-samyamakamanirjarabalatapamsi daivasya

(The inflow) of देवायु celestial-age-karma (is caused by)

(1) सरागसंयम *Saraga-samyama* self-control with slight attachment [found in monks only]

संयमासंयम *Samyamasamyama* restraint of vows of some but not of other passions [found in laymen only]

अकामनिर्जरा *Akama-nirjara* equanimous submission to the fruition of karma.

(4) बालतप *Balatapa* austerities not based upon right knowledge

SUTRA 21

सम्यक्त्वं च ॥ २१ ॥

Samyaktvam cha

Right-belief (is) also (the cause of celestial age karmas but only of the heavenly order It applies to human and sub-human only A celestial or hellish right believer binds the human age-karma Note also that if a human or sub-human beings has bound a particular

age karma before gaining right belief, he must enjoy that See also Jiva Kanda 292, 527, 645 Karma Kanda 158

SUTRA 22

योगवक्रता विसंवादनं चाशुभस्य नाम्न ॥ २२ ॥

Yogavakrata visamvadanam chasubhasya namnah

(The inflow) of अशुभनाम *Ashubhanama* bad body making karma (is caused by a) non straight forward (or deceitful working) of the mind body or speech (or) by (विसंवाद *Visamvada*) wrangling etc Wrong belief Envy, Back biting Self-praise, Censuring and others etc)

SUTRA 23

तद्विपरीतं शुभस्य ॥ २३ ॥

Tadviparitam shubhasya

(The inflow) of शुभनाम good body making karma (is caused by the causes) opposite of the above, (i.e. by straight forward dealings with body mind and speech by avoiding disputes etc. right belief, humility admiring praise worthy people etc.)

SUTRA 24

दर्शनविशुद्धिर्विनयसम्पन्नता शीलव्रतेष्वनतीचारोऽभीक्ष्णज्ञानोपयोग संवेगौ शक्तितस्त्यागतपसी साधुसमाधिर्वैयावृत्यकरणमर्हदाचार्यबहुश्रुतप्रवचन-भक्तिरावश्यकापरिहाणिर्मार्गप्रभावनाप्रवचनवत्सलत्वमिति तीर्थंकरत्वस्य ॥ २४ ॥

Darshanavishuddhirvinayasampannata shilavrateshvanaticharoabhiksnanjnanopayogasamvegau shaktitastyagatapasi sadhusamadhirvaiyavrityakaranamarhadacharyabahushrutapravachanabhaktiravashsyakaparihanirmargaprabhavanapravachanavatsalatva miti tirthamkaratvasya

(The inflow) of तीर्थंकरत्व *Tirthamkara* body making karma (is caused by meditation (भावना Bhavana) of the following 16 matters)

1 दर्शन विशुद्धि *Darshana vishuddhi*, Purity of right belief

Pure right belief is with 8 Angas or the following 8 qualities —

1 निःशंकित *Nishshankita* Free from all doubt

2 निःकांक्षित *Niskamksita* Free from worldly desire

3 निर्विचिकित्सित *Nirvichikitsita* Free from repulsion from anything

4 अमूढदृष्टि *Amudhadristi* Free from superstitious belief

5 उपबृंहण *Upabrihanam* or (more popularly), उपगूहन *Upaguhana* Free from a tendency to proclaim the faults of others

6 स्थितिकरण *Shitikarana* To help oneself or others to remain steady in the path of truth

7 वात्सल्य *Vatsalya* Tender affection for one s brothers on the path of Liberation

8 प्रभावना *Prabhavana* Propagation of the path of Liberation

2 विनयसम्पन्नता *Vinaya sampannata* Reverence for means of Liberation and for those who follow them.

3 शीलव्रतेष्वनतिचार *Shilaratesvanatichara* Faultless observance of the 5 vows and a faultless subdual of the passions

4 अभीक्ष्णज्ञानोपयोग *Abhiksana-jnanopayoga* Ceaseless pursuit of right knowledge

5 संवेग *Samvega* Perpetual apprehension of mundane miseries.

6 शक्तितस्त्याग *Shaktitastyaga* Giving up (for others of knowledge etc) according to one s capacity

7 शक्तितस्तप *Shaktitastapah* The practice of austerities, according to one s capacity

8 साधुसमाधि *Sadhu-samadhi* Protecting and reassuring the saints or removing their troubles.

9 वैयावृत्त्यकरण *Vaiyavrittya karana* Serving the meritorious

10 अर्हद्भक्ति *Arhadbhakti* Devotion to Arhats or Omniscient Lords

11 आचार्यभक्ति *Acharyabhakti* Devotion to Acharyas or Heads of the orders of saints

12 बहुश्रुतभक्ति *Bahusrutabhakti* Devotion to Upadhyayas (उपाध्याय) or teaching saints

13 प्रवचनभक्ति *Pravachanabhakti* Devotion to Scriptures

14 आवश्यकापरिहाणि *Avashyakaparihani* Not neglecting one's (6 important daily) duties

15 मार्गप्रभावना *Margaprabhavana* Propagation of the path of Liberation

16 प्रवचनवत्सलत्व *Pravachana-vatsalatva* Tender affection for one s brothers the path of Liberation

Even one of these if properly contemplated and with right belief brings about the inflow of Tirthakara body-making karma

SUTRA 25

परात्मनिन्दाप्रशंसे सदसद्गुणोच्छादनोद्भावने च नीचैर्गोत्रस्य ॥२५॥

Paratmanindaprashamse sadasadgunochchhadanodbhavane cha nichairgotrasya

(The inflow) of नीचैर्गोत्र low family determining karma (is caused by)

1 परनिन्दा *Paraninda* speaking ill of others;

2 आत्मप्रशंसा *Atmaprashansa* praising oneself;

3 सद्गुणोच्छादन *Sadgunochchhadan*, concealing the good qualities of others; and

4 असद्गुणोद्भावन *Asadgunodbhavan* proclaiming in oneself the good qualities which one does not possess.

SUTRA 26

तद्विपर्ययो नीचैर्वृत्त्यनुत्सेकौ चोत्तरस्य ॥ २६ ॥

Tadviparyayo nichairvrityanutsekau chottarasya

(The inflow) of the next, (i e उच्चगोत्र high-family determining karma is caused by) the opposite of the above (i e by)

1 परप्रशंसा *Paraprashmsha* praising others;

2 आत्मनिन्दा *Atmaninda*, denouncing one s self;

3 सद्गुणोद्भावन *Sadgunodbhavana* proclaiming the good qualities of others;

4 असद्गुणोच्छादन *Asadgunochchhadana* not proclaiming one's own;

5 नीचैर्वृत्ति *Nichairvritti* an attitude of humility towards one s better

6 अनुत्सेक *Anutseka*, not being proud of one s own achievements or attainments

SUTRA 27

विघ्नकरणमन्तरायस्य ॥ २७ ॥

Vighnakaranamantrayasya

(The inflow) of obstructive (अन्तराय *Antaraya*) karma (is caused by) disturbing others (in दान charity लाभ gain; भोग enjoyment of consumable things; उपभोग enjoyment of non consumable things; and वीर्य making use of their powers)

NOTE—The inflow of 7 karmas i.e. of all except the age-karma is going on always in souls influenced by the Passion and of the age-karma also on special occasions. But the predominance of the above causes will determine the intensity of fruition (Anubhaga) of their particulor inflow.

The special occasions of age-karma are 8 in one man's life as follows. Supposing a man's life is to be 81 years long. The first will be on his passing $\frac{2}{3}$ of it i.e. when he is 54. The second on his passing $\frac{2}{3}$ of the remainder i.e. when he is 72. The third on his passing $\frac{2}{3}$ of the remainder i.e. when he is 78. Fourth on his passing $\frac{2}{3}$ of the remainder again, i.e. when he is 80. And similarly the fifth when he is 80 years and 8 months. The sixth at 80 years 10 months and 20 days. The seventh at 80 years 11 months, 16 days and 16 hours. The eighth at 80 years 11 months, 25 days 13 hours and 20 minutes. If not then the ninth is the last moment.



अध्याय सातवां

CHAPTER VII

SUTRA 1

हिंसाऽनृतस्तेयाब्रह्मपरिग्रहेभ्यो विरतिर्व्रतम् ॥ १ ॥

Hımsaanrıtasteyabrahmaparıgrahebhyo viratırvratam

व्रत *Vrata* or vow ıs to be free from

(1) हिंसा *Himsa* ınjury,
(2) अनृत *Anrıta,* falsehood,
(3) स्तेय *Steya, theft,*
(4) अब्रह्म *Abrahma,* unchastıty, and
(5) परिग्रह *Parıgraha,* worldly attachment; (or worldly objects)

SUTRA 2

देशसर्वतोऽणुमहती ॥ २ ॥

Deshasarvatoanumahatı

(Vows are of 2 kinds.)

1 अणुव्रत *Anuvrata* partıal vow (that ıs lımıted abstentıon from the five faults gıven above),

0 महाव्रत *Mahavrata,* full vow, (ı e total abstentıon.)

SUTRA 3

तत्स्थैर्यार्थं भावन पञ्च पञ्च ॥ ३ ॥

Tatasthairyartham bhavanah panch panch

For the fixing of these (5 vows ın the mınd, these are) 5 (kınds of) meditatıon (भावना bhavana, for) each (of the vows.)

SUTRA 4

वागनेागुप्तीर्यादाननिक्षेपणासमित्यालेाकितपानभोजनानि पञ्च ॥ ४ ॥

Vanganoguptıryadananıksepanasamıtya
lokıtapanabhojananı pancha

The 5 (meditations for the vow against injury are)

1 वाग्गुप्ति *Vaggupti*, Preservation of speech ;

2 मनोगुप्ति *Manogupti*, Preservation of mind

3 ईर्या *Irya*, Care in walking ;

4 आदान-निक्षेपण-समिति *Adana niksepana-samiti* Care in lifting and laying down things

5 आलोकितपान भोजन *Alokitapana-bhojan*, thoroughly seeing to one's food and drink.

SUTRA 5

क्रोधलोभभीरुत्वहास्यप्रत्याख्यानान्यनुवीचि भाषणं च पञ्च ॥ ५ ॥

Krodhalobhabhirutvahasyapratyákhyánanyanvvichi bhasanam cha pancha

And five (meditations for the vow against falsehood)

1 क्रोध प्रत्याख्यान *Krodha-pratyakhyana* Giving up anger ;
2 लोभ *Lobha*, " " greed ,
3 भीरुत्व *Bhirutva* , " " "cowardice or fear
4 हास्य प्रत्याख्यान, *Hasya* " Giving up of frivolity ;
5 अनुविची भाषण, *Anuvichi-bhasana* Speaking in accordance with scriptural injunctions

SUTRA 6

शून्यागारविमोचितावासपरोपरोधाकरणभैक्ष्यशुद्धि सधर्माऽविसंवादा पञ्च ॥६॥

Shunyagaravimochitavasaparoparodhakaranabhaiksyash-uddhi sadharmaavisamvadah panch

(For the vow against theft, the) five (meditations are)

1 शून्यागार, *Shunyagara*, Residence in a solitary place, like a mountain cave etc ;

2. विमोचितावास *Vimochitavasa* Residence in a deserted place ;

3 परोपरोधाकरण *Paroparodhakarana* Residence in a place where one is not likely to be prohibited by others, nor where one should be likely to prohibit others ,

4 भैक्ष्यशुद्धि *Bhaiksya-suddhi* Purity of alms, according to the scriptures ;

5 सद्धर्माविसंवाद *Saddharmavisamvada* Not disputing with one's co-religionists as to 'mine" and 'thine'

SUTRA 7

स्त्रीरागकथाश्रवणतन्मनोहराङ्गनिरीक्षणपूर्वरतानुस्मरणवृष्येष्टरसस्वशरीरसंस्कारत्यागाः पञ्च ॥ ७ ॥

Striragakathashrvanatanmanoharanganiriksanapurvaratanu smaranavrisyestarasasvashariraamskaratyagaha pancha

For the vow against unchasity the five (meditations are)

1 स्त्रीरागकथाश्रवणत्याग *Striraga-katha shravanatyaga,* Renouncing of (reading or) hearing stories exciting attachment for women ;
2 तन्मनोहराङ्गनिरीक्षणत्याग *Tanmanoharanga-niriksana tyaga,* Renouncing of seeing their beautiful bodies ;
3 पूर्वरतानुस्मरणत्याग *Purvaratanusmarana tyaga* Renouncing of thinking over, (rememberance of) past enjoyment of women ;
4 वृष्येष्टरसत्याग *Vrisyestarasa tyaga* Renouncing of exciting and aphrodisiac drinks ; and
5 स्वशरीरसंस्कारत्याग *Svasharirasamskara tyaga,* Renouncing of beautifying one s own body ; self-adornment.

SUTRA 8

मनोज्ञामनोज्ञेन्द्रियविषयरागद्वेषवर्जनानि पञ्च ॥ ८ ॥

Manojnamanojnendriyavisayaragadvesavarjanani pancha.

(For the vow against worldly attachment the 5 (meditations are) giving up or self denial of love and hatred (रागद्वेष *Raga dvesa*) in the pleasing (and) displeasing (worldly) objects of the (five) senses

SUTRA 9

हिंसादिष्विहामुत्रापायावद्यदर्शनम् ॥ ९ ॥

Himsadisvihamutrapayavadyadarshanam

The destructive or dangerous (and) censurable (character of the 5 faults,) injury, etc. in this (as also) in the next world (ought to be) meditated upon.

SUTRA 10

दुःखमेव वा ॥ १० ॥

Duhkha-meva va

(One must also meditate, that the five faults injury, etc are) pain personified (as they themselves are the veritable wombs of pain)

SUTRA 11

मैत्रीप्रमोदकारुण्यमाध्यस्थानि च सत्वगुणाधिकक्लिश्यमानाऽविनयेषु ॥ ११ ॥

Maitripramodakarunyamadhyasthani cha sattvagunadhikalkishyamanavinayesu

And (we must meditate upon the 4 following)

1 मैत्री *Maitri* Benevolence (for) सत्वेषु *Satvesu*, all living beings,

2 प्रमोद, *Pramoda* Delight (at the sight of beings) गुणाधिकेषु *Gunadhikesu*, better qualified (or more advanced than ourselves on the path of liberation ,)

3 कारुण्य *Karunya* Pity Compassion (for) क्लिश्यमानेषु *Klishyamanesu* the afflicted ;

4 माध्यस्थ *Maddhyastha*, Tolernce or indifference (to those who are) अविनयेषु *Avinayesu* uncivil or ill-behaved

SUTRA 12

जगत्कायस्वभावौ वा संवेगवैराग्यार्थम् ॥ १२ ॥

Jagatkayasvabha va uvasamvegavairagyartham

For संवेग *Samvega* the apprehension of the miseries of the world and वैराग्य *Vairagya* non-attachment to sense pleasures (we should meditate upon) the nature of the world and of our physical body The world is transitory and not fit for love ; and the body is impure and hampering in spiritual progress and therefore should be subordinated to the soul

SUTRA 13

प्रमत्तयोगात्प्राणव्यपरोपणं हिंसा ॥ १३ ॥

Pramattayogatpranavyaparopanam himsa

By (प्रमत्तयोग), passional vibrations, (प्राणव्यपरोपणं), the hurting of the vitalities (is) (हिंसा) injury

Injury on himsa is to hurt the प्राण् *Pranas* or vitalities, through प्रमत्तयोग *Pramattayoga* i e, vibration due to the Passions, which agitate mind, body or speech.

SUTRA 14

असदभिधानमनृतम् ॥ १४ ॥

Asadabhidhanamanritam

Falsehood (is) to speak hurtful-words (through प्रमत्तयोग *Pramattyoga* passional vibrations)

SUTRA 15

अदत्तादान स्तेयम् ॥ १५ ॥

Adattadanam steyam

Theft (is) to take anything which is not given, (through Pramat tayoga)

SUTRA 16

मैथुनमब्रह्म ॥ १६ ॥

Maithunamabrahma

Unchastity is coition (or sexual contact, through Pramatta yoga)

SUTRA 17

मूर्च्छा परिग्रहः ॥ १७ ॥

Murchha parigrahah

Worldly attachment is मूर्छा *Murchha*, infatuation (or intoxication through Pramattayoga, in the living or non living objects of the world)

Worldly objects are said to be Parigraha, because they are the external causes of internal attachment.

SUTRA 18

निःशल्यो व्रती ॥ १८ ॥

Nihshalyo vrati

A व्रती *Vrati* or a vower should be without (blemish which is like a) thorn (शल्य *Shalya* which makes the whole body restless)

This शल्य *Shalya* or blemish is of 3 kinds :

1 मायाशल्य *Maya shalya*, the thorn of deceit
2 मिथ्याशल्य *Mithya shalya* the thorn of wrong-belief
3 निदान, *Nidana* the thorn of Desire for future sense pleasures

SUTRA 19

अगार्यनगारश्च ॥ १९ ॥

Agaryaanagarshcha,

(Vowers are of 2 kinds ,) अगारी *Agari* house-holders (laymen) and अनगार *Anagara*, house-less (ascetics.)

SUTRA 20

अणुव्रतोऽगारी ॥ २० ॥

Anuvratoagari

(One whose five) vows (are) partial (is) a house-holder

The house-holder's life has 11 प्रतिमा *Pratimas* or stages

1 दर्शनप्रतिमा, *Darshana-pratima* A true Jain must have perfect and intelligent belief in Jainism He must have a good knowledge of its dotrines and their applications He must give up meat, wine and honey He must have a belief free from defects He must more or less observe the 5 vows.

2 व्रतप्रतिमा *Vrata pratima* He must observe the 5 Anuvratas without defect, the 3 gunavratas, and 4 Siksavratas. To give details he must not destroy life must not tell a lie must not make unpermitted use of another man's property, must be chaste and must limit his possessions for life (the 5 Anuvartas) he must make a perpetual and a daily vow to go in certain directions and to certain distances only, must avoid useless talk, act or thought of sinful things (the 3

Gunavratas); and he must limit the articles of his diet and enjoyment for the day must worship at fixed times in morning noon and evening must keep fast on certain days and must give charity in the way of knowledge, money, etc., every day (the 4 Shikhsavratas) He must try not to transgress the last seven vows also

3 सामयिक प्र॰ *Samayika P*, He must meditate faultlessly, regularly, and for fixed hours at mid-day evening and morning not less than 48 minutes every time

4 प्रोषधोपवास प्र॰, *Prosadhopavasa P* He must fast faultlessly on the 8th and 14th day of every lunar fortnight

5 सचित्तत्याग प्र॰ *Sachittatyaga P* He must not take Animate vegetable and water He must follow this faultlessly

6 रात्रि-भुक्त त्याग प्र॰ *Ratri-bhukta-tyaga P* He must not take or give food or drink at night, this must be faultless.

7 ब्रह्मचर्य प्र॰ *Brahma charyya P* He must give up sexual intercourse even with his wife. This must be faultless

8 आरम्भत्याग प्र॰, *Ārambha-tyaga P* He must give up his means of livelihood cooking, etc.

9 परिग्रहत्याग प्र॰ *Parigraha tyaga P* He must give up his desire for the objects of the world and be contented with abandoning all his property except a few clothes and utensils.

10 अनुमतित्याग प्र॰ *Anumata tyaga P* He must not even advise on any worldly activity

11 उद्दिष्टत्याग प्र॰ *Uddista-tyaga P* He will beg his food, and refuse what is specially prepared for him He may be Ksullaka with a small sheet and loin cloth, or an Ailaka with only a loin cloth, and dining only off his hands They both carry a pot of water and a peacock brush. The former carries an alms bowl also

SUTRA 21

दिग्देशानर्थदण्डविरतिसामायिकप्रोषधोपवासोपभोग परिभोगपरिमाणा
तिथिसंविभागव्रतसम्पन्नश्च ॥ २१ ॥

Digdeshanarthadandaviratisamayikaprosadhopavasopabhogaparibhogaparimanatithisamvibhagavratasampannash cha

(The house holder)must be with (the flollowing 7 supplementary-vows)also

1 दिग्व्रत *Digvrata*, (Taking a life-long vow) to limit (his worldly activity to fixed points in all the 10)directions, (i e East West, North South, South east, East-north North-west, and West-south, and up and down)

2 देशव्रत, *Deshavrata* (Taking a vow to) limit (the above also for a) shorter (period of time, e g for one's weekly or daily worldly activity)

3 अनर्थदण्ड व्रत, *Anarthadanda-vrata*, (Taking a vow) not to commit purposeless sin ; (It has 5 kinds)

(1) अपध्यान, *Apadhyana*, Thinking ill of others ;
(2) पापोपदेश , *Papopadesha* Preaching of sin (to others),
(3) प्रमादचरित्र, *Pramada-charitra* Thoughtless or inconsiderate conduct (as breaking the boughs of trees etc , without any purpose)
(4) हिंसादान,*Himsadana* Giving objects of offence (to others)
(5) दुःश्रुति, *Duhshruti*, (reading or) hearing bad (books)

The above 3 i e Digvrata, Deshavrata and Anarth-dandavrata) are called गुणव्रत *Gunavratas*, multiplicative vows, because they raise the value of the 5 vows (Ahimsa, etc)

4 सामायिक *Samayika*, (Taking a vow to devote so much time everyday (once, twice or three times at sunrise sunset and noon to) contemplation of the self (for spiritual anvancement)

5 प्रोषधोपवास, *Prosadhopavasa*, (Taking a vow to) fast (on 4 days of the month, *viz*, the two अष्टमी 8th and the two चतुर्दशी 14th days of every lunar fort-night)

(Fast means abstention from food and drink and devoting one's time to religious study and contemplation, etc.)

6 उपभोग परिभोग-परिमाण *Upabhoga-paribhoga-parimana* (Taking a vow every day) limiting one's enjoyment of consumable and non-consumable things

7 अतिथि संविभाग *Atithi-samvibhaga* (Taking a vow to take one s food (only after) feeding the ascetics with a part (of it.)

If ascetics are scarce, another person may be fed in their place, if he is observing the vows of a house-holder or is possessed of right belief , or any afflicted or poor person

These last 4 (i e Samayika, Prosadhopavasa Upabhoga-paribhogaparimana and Atithi samvibhaga) are called शिक्षाव्रत *Siksavratas*, disciplinary vows so called because they are preparatory for the discipline of ascetic s life

SUTRA 22

मारणान्तिकीं सल्लेखनां जोषिता ॥ २२ ॥

Maranantikim sallekhanam josita

(The house-holder is aslo) the observer in the last moment of his life (of the process of) सल्लेखना *Sallekhana* peaceful death (which is characterised by non-attachment to the world and by a suppression of the passions)

Thus the house-holder s vows are 12 with the last or peaceful death as their supplement

SUTRA 23

शङ्काकाङ्क्षा विचिकित्सान्यदृष्टिप्रशंसासंस्तवाः सम्यग्दृष्टेरतिचाराः ॥ २३ ॥

Shankakanksavichikitsanyadristiprashamsasamstavah samyagd risteraticharah

(There are 5) defects or partial transgressions (अतिचार) (which should not be found) in a man of right belief

1. शंका, *Shanka* Doubt Scepticism ,
2. कांक्षा *Kanksa* Desire of sense pleasures ,
3. विचिकित्सा *Vichikitasa* Disgust at anything e g with a sick or deformed person ;
4. अन्यदृष्टिप्रशंसा *Anyadristiprshamasa* § Thinking admiringly of wrong believers ,
5. अन्यदृष्टिसंस्तव *Anyadristi sanstava* Praising wrong believers

SUTRA 24

व्रतशीलेषु पञ्च पञ्च यथाक्रमम् ॥ २४ ॥

Vrata shilesu pancha pancha yathakramam

(There are) 5 (defects) respectively in each (of the 5) व्रत *Vrata* vows and (7) शील *Shila*, supplementary vows (which should be avoided)

SUTRA 25

बन्धवधच्छेदातिभारारोपणान्नपाननिरोधाः ॥ २५ ॥

Bandha badhachchhedati bhara ropana nnapana nirodhah

(The partial transgressions of the first vow अहिंसा अणुव्रत are)

1 बन्ध, (Angrily or carelessly) tying up (an animal or human being)

2 वध, (Angrily or carelessly beating (an animal or human being)
3, छेद, „ mutilating „
5 अतिभारारोपण „ , with-holding food or drink from an animal or human being

SUTRA 26

मिथ्यापदेशरहोभ्याख्यानकूटलेखक्रियान्यासापहारसाकारमन्त्रभेदाः ॥२६॥

Mithyopadesha rahobhyakhyana kuta lekha kriya nyasapahara sakara mantrabhedah

(The partial transgressions of the second vow सत्याणुव्रत *Satyanuvrata* are)

1 मिथ्योपदेश *Mithyopadesha* Preaching false doctrines
2 रहोभ्याख्यान, *Rahobhyakhyana* Divulging the secret (actions of man and woman)
3 कूटलेखक्रिया *Kutalekhakriya* Forgery (and perjury)
4 न्यासापहार *Nyasapahara,* Unconscientious dealing by means of speech e g, A deposits Rs 1000 with B, and then thinking that he has deposited only Rs 900 demands Rs 900 B says Yes take whatever you deposited and gives him Rs. 900 This is nyasapahar
5 साकारमन्त्रभेद *Sakaramantrabheda,* Divulging what one guesses by seeing the behaviour or gestures of others, who are consulting in private

SUTRA 27

स्तेनप्रयोगतदाहृतादानविरुद्धराज्यातिक्रमहीनाधिकमानोन्मानप्रतिरूपकव्यवहाराः ॥ २७ ॥

Stena prayogatadahritadanaviruddha rajyatikrama hinadhika manonmanapratirupaka vyavaharah

(The partial transgressions of the third vow अचौर्याणुव्रत *Achauryanuvrata* are)

1 स्तेनप्रयोग *Stenaprayoga* Abetment of theft
2 तदाहृतादान *Tadahritadana* Receiving stolen property
3 विरुद्धराज्यातिक्रम *Viruddharajyatikrama,* Illegal traffic (e g by selling things at inordinate prices in time of war, or) to alien enemies, etc

4 हीनाधिकमानोन्मान *Hinadhika-manonmana* False weights and measures

5 प्रतिरूपकव्यवहार,*Pratirupaka vyavahara* Adulteration,

SUTRA 28

परविवाहकरणेत्वरिकापरिगृहीतापरिगृहीतागमनानङ्गक्रीडाकामतीव्राभिनिवेशाः ॥ २८ ॥

Paravivahakaranetvarikaparigrihitaparigrihitagamananangakrida kamativrabhiniveshah

(The partial transgression of the fourth vow ब्रह्म are)

1 परविवाहकरण *Paravivahakarana* Bringing about the marriage of people who are not of one s own family

2. इत्वरिकापरिगृहीतागमन *Itvarikaparigrahitagamana* Intercourse with a married immoral woman

इत्वरिकापरिगृहीतागमन *Itvarikaaparigrahitagamana*, Intercourse with an unmarried immoral woman

4 अनङ्गक्रीडा *Anangakrida*, Unnatural sexual intercourse

5 कामतीव्राभिनिवेश *Kamativrabhiniveshah* Intense sexual desire

SUTRA 29

क्षेत्रवास्तुहिरण्यसुवर्णधनधान्यदासीदासकुप्यप्रमाणातिक्रमाः ॥ २९ ॥

Ksetravastuhiranyasuvarnadhanadhanyadasidasa-kupyapramanatikramah

Transgressing the limit of fields houses silver gold cattle corn, female and male servants clothes

NOTE—The partial transgressions of the fifth vow परिग्रहपरिमाणव्रत *Parigrahaparimanavrata* arise when a man limits the quantity of say two kinds of things but then changes the proportion of those things, although the quantity remains the same e g he limits his land possessions to 4 fields and 2 houses Then wanting a house more he acquires 3 houses and reduces the fields by one Thus though the number and possibly the value of his possessions may remain the same still the limit of his vow is partially transgressed This sort of

transgression may be between 5 pairs of possessions as follows

1 { क्षेत्र Fields, वास्तु, Houses }

2 { हिरण्य, Silver; सुवर्ण Gold }

3 { धन, Cattle; धान्य Corn }

4 { दासी Female-servant; दास, Male-servant }

5 { कुप्य Clothes etc (i e things of toilet, etc); (भाण्ड Bhanda crockery or utensils) }

SUTRA 30

ऊर्ध्वाधस्तिर्यग्व्यतिक्रमक्षेत्रवृद्धिस्मृत्यन्तराधानानि ॥ ३०॥

Urdhvadhastiryagvyatikramaksetravriddhi smrityantaradhanani

(The partial transgressions of the first गुणव्रत *gunavrata* i e दिग्व्रत *digvrata* are)

1 ऊर्ध्वव्यतिक्रम *Urdhvavyatikrama* (In passion or negligence to go up) higher than your limit (in the vow)

2 अधोव्यतिक्रम *Adhahvyatikrama* (In passion or negligence to go down) lower than your limit (in the vow)

3 तिर्यग्व्यतिक्रम *Tiryag vyatikrama* (In passion or negligence to go in the) other 8 directions beyond your limit (in the vow)

4 क्षेत्रवृद्धि *Ksetravriddhi* (In passion or negligence) to increase (in one and decrease in the other directions the boundaries (of the distance which is the limit in the vow)

5 स्मृत्यन्तराधान *Smrityantaradhana* Forgetting the limit in the vow (but still to go on recklessly This transgression will arise even if the limit vowed is not exceeded)

SUTRA 31

आनयनप्रेष्यप्रयोगशब्दरूपानुपातपुद्गलक्षेपाः ॥ ३१ ॥

Anayanapresyaprayogashabdarupanupatapudgalaksepah

(The partial transgressions of the second Gunavrata i e देशव्रत *deshavrata* are)

1. आनयन *Anayana*, sending for something from beyond the limit
2. प्रेष्यप्रयोग *Presyaprayoga* sending some one out beyond the limit
3. शब्दानुपात *Shabdanupata* sending one's voice out beyond limit, *e g* by telephone
4. रूपानुपात *Rupanupata* making signs for persons beyond the limit as the morse code with flag etc
5. पुद्गलक्षेप *Pudgalaksepa* Throwing something material beyond the limit

SUTRA 32

कन्दर्पकौत्कुच्यमौखर्यासमीक्ष्याधिकरणोपभोगपरिभोगानर्थक्यानि ॥ ३२ ॥

Kandarpakautkuchyamaukharyasamiksyadhikaranopab-hogaparibhoganarthakyani

(The partial transgression of the Third Gunavrata' *i e* अनर्थदण्डव्रत *anarthadandavrata* are

1. कन्दर्प *Kandarpa* Poking fun at another
2. कौत्कुच्य *Kautkuchya* Gesticulating and mischievous practical joking
3. मौखर्य *Mauhkarya* Gossip garrulity
4. असमीक्ष्याधिकरण *Asamiksyadhikarana* Overdoing a thing
5. उपभोगपरिभोगानर्थक्य *Upabhogaparibhoganarthakya* Keeping too many consumable and non consumable objects

SUTRA 33

योगदुष्प्रणिधानानादरस्मृत्यनुपस्थानानि ॥ ३३ ॥

Yogaduhpranidhananadarasmrityanupasthanani

(The partial transgressions of the first शिक्षाव्रत, *Siksavrata i e*, सामायिक *Samayika* are)

1. मनोदुष्प्रणिधानम् *Manoduspranidhanam* Misdirection of mind (during meditation)
2. कायदुष्प्रणिधानम् *Kayaduspranidhanam* Misdirection of body (during meditation.)
3. वाग्दुष्प्रणिधानम् *Vakdusprandhanam* Misdirection of speech during meditation.

4 अनादर, *Anadara*, Lack of interest
5 स्मृत्युनुपस्थान *Smrityunupasthana*, Forgetting of due formalities

SUTRA 34

अप्रत्यवेक्षिताप्रमार्जितोत्सर्गादानसंस्तरोपक्रमणानादरस्मृत्यनुपस्थानानि ॥ ३४ ॥

Apratyaveksitapramarjitotsargadanasamstaropakramananadarasmrityanupasthanani

(The partial transgression of the second शिक्षाव्रत *Siksavrata* i e, प्रोषधोपवास *Prosadhopavasa* are)

1, अप्रत्यवेक्षिताप्रमार्जितोत्सर्ग *Apratyaveksitapramarjitotsarga* To excrete in a place without inspecting and without sweeping it
2 अप्रत्यवेक्षिताप्रमार्जितादान *Apratyaveksitapramarjitadana*, To take up or lay down things in a place without inspecting and without sweeping it
3 अप्रत्यवेक्षिताप्रमार्जितसंस्तरोपक्रमण, *Apratyaveksitapramarjita Sanstaropakramana* To spread a mat or seat in a place without inspecting and without sweeping it
4 अनादर *Anadara* Lack of interest
5 स्मृत्यनुपस्थान *Smrityanupasthana* Forgetting of due formalities

SUTRA 35

सचित्तसम्बन्धसम्मिश्राभिषवदुःपक्वाहारा ॥ ३५ ॥

Sachittasambandhasammishrabhisavaduhpakvahara

(The partial transgression of the third शिक्षाव्रत *Siksavrata* i e उपभोगपरिभोगपरिमाणव्रत *Upbhogaparibhagoparimanavrata* are

1 सचित्ताहार *Sachittahara*, Taking living things e g green vegetable
2 सचित्तसम्बन्धाहार *Sachittasambanda Ahara* Taking anything connected with a living things e. g using a green leaf as a plate
3 सचित्तसम्मिश्राहार *Schittasammihra Ahara* Taking a mixture of living and non living things e g hot with fresh water
4 अभिषवाहार *Abhisavahara* Taking aphrodisiacs or strengthening or exciting food
5 दुःपक्वाहार, *Duhpakvahara* Taking badly cooked food

SUTRA 36

सचित्तनिक्षेपापिधानपरव्यपदेशमात्सर्यकालातिक्रमाः ॥ ३६ ॥

Sachittaniksepapidhanaparavyapadeshamatsarya kalatikramah

(The partial transgression of the fourth शिक्षाव्रत *Siksavrata* i e अतिथिसंविभागव्रत *Atithisambibhagairatra* are)

1 सचित्तनिक्षेप *Sachittaniksepa* Placing the faod on a living thing e. g on a green plantain leaf

2 सचित्तापिधान, Schittapidhana Covering the food with a living thing

3 परव्यपदेश Paravyupadesha Delegation of host s duties to another

4 मात्सर्य Matsarya Lack of respect in giving or envy of another donor

5 कालातिक्रम Kalatikrama Not giving at the proper time.

SUTRA 37

जीवितमरणाशंसामित्रानुरागसुखानुबन्धनिदानानि ॥ ३७ ॥

Jivitamaranasamsamitranuragasukhanubandhanidanani

(The partial transgression of सल्लेखना *Sallekhana* (peaceful death) are)

1 जीविताशंसा *Jivitashansa* Desire to prolong one s life

2 मरणाशंसा *Marnashansa* Desire to die soon

3 मित्रानुराग *Mitranuraga* Attachment to friends.

4 सुखानुबन्ध *Sukhanubandha* Repeated remembrance of past enjoyments

5 *Nidana* Desire of enjoyments in the next world

SUTRA 38

अनुग्रहार्थं स्वस्यातिसर्गो दानम् ॥ ३८ ॥

Anugrahartham svasyatisargo danam

Charity is the giving off one s belongings for the good (of one s self and of others)

अध्याय आठवां

CHAPTER V111

SUTRA 1

मिथ्यादर्शनाविरतिप्रमादकषाययोगा बन्धहेतवः ॥ १ ॥

Mithyadarshanaviratipramadakasayayoga bandha hetavah

The causes of (बन्ध) Bandha or bondage are

1 मिथ्यादर्शन Mithyadarshana wrong belief It is of 5 kinds

(1) एकान्त Ekanta Taking only one aspect of a many-sided thing e g man is mortal and un mortal, regarded from the point of view of body and soul respectively Taking only one view is Ekanta

(2) विपरीत Viparita perverse belief, e g animal sacrifices lead to heaven

(3) संशय Samshaya, Doubt scepticism, hesitation, e g, as to path to Liberation

(4) विनय Vinaya Veneration Taking all religions and gods to be equally worthy of pursuit,

(5) अज्ञान Ajnana Wrong belief caused by ignorance Indiscrimination of good and bad. It is caused by

निसर्ग Nisarga inborn error or by अधिगम Adhigama preaching of another

The last is of 4 kinds

क्रियावादी Kriyavadi belief in time soul etc, as causing every thing in the world.

अक्रियावादी Akriyavadi opposite of the last

अज्ञानिक Ajnanika, Agnostic

वैनयिक Vaineyika Religion is identical with veneration of parents king etc e g Confucianism

All these four together form 363 varieties of wrong belief(or पाखण्ड) i e, 180 84 67 and 32 respectively

निसर्गज Nisargaja is also clled अग्रहीत Agrahita, अधिगमज Adhigamaja, ग्रहीत Grahita

(2) अविरति Avirati vowlessness Non renunciation It is of 12 kinds

Lack of compassion for 6 classes of embodied souls; and lack of restraint of 5 senses and 1 mind

(3) प्रमाद Pramada Carelessness. This is of 15 kinds

Four kinds of कथा Katha talk about

1 Food (भोजनकथा Bhojana-Katha)
2 Women (स्त्रीकथा Stri-Katha)
3 Politics (राज्यकथा Rajya-Katha)
4 Scandal (देशकथा Desha-Katha)
5 Senses (इन्द्रिय)
4 Passions (कषाय)
1 Affection (स्नेह)
1 Sleep (निद्रा)

---

15 Each together bring 80 भंग bhanga divisions

As 1 Katha × 1 sense × 1 passion × 1 Sneha × 1 Nidra = one

So 4 kinds of talk × 5 senses × 4 passions × 1 affection × 1 sleep = 80

4 कषाय Kasaya passions given below (सूत्र Sutra 9)

5 योग Yoga Vibrations in the soul through mind, body and speech. They are of 15 kinds

4 of mind

(1) सत्यमन Satyamana true mind
(2) असत्यमन Asatyamana false mind
(3) उभयमन Ubhayamana mixed true and false mind
(4) अनुभयमन Anubhaya mana neither true not false

4 of speech.

(1) सत्यवचन Satya vachana True
(2) असत्यवचन Asatya-vachana False
(3) उभयवचन Ubhaya vachana Both
(4) अनुभयवचन *Anubkaya vachana* None

7 of body

(1) औदारिक *Audarika* physical.
(2) औदारिकमिश्र *Audarika mishra* i e physical with karmic
(3) वैक्रियक *Vaikriyaka* Fluid
(4) वैक्रियकमिश्र *Vaikriyaka mishra* Fluid with karmic
(5) आहारक *Aharaka*
(6) आहारकमिश्र *Aharaka mishra* i e Aharaka with physical
(7) कार्माण *Karmana* Karmic

[NOTE—The तैजस *Taijas*, electric body is always found with the karmic body never has independent yoga (योग) The

electric molecules are drawn like the karmic molecules by the vibrations set in the soul by yoga of any kind

As to these 5 causes of bondage

In the 1st, 2nd and 3rd गुणस्थान *Gunasthanas*, Stages of Spirituality all the causes are found, though in the second the first is absent for a very short time

In the 4th Gunasthana, all but the 1st are found

In the 5th and 6th Gunasthanas all but the first 2 are found

In the 7th, 8th 9th and 10th Gunasthanas all but the first 3 are found

In the 11th 12th and 13th Gunasthanas all but the first 4 are found

In the 14th Gunasthana none

These 5 are collectively called प्रत्यय *Pratyaya*

(See कुन्दकुन्दाचार्य समयसारप्राभृतम् *Kundakundacharya's Samaya Sara Prabhritam*)

SUTRA 2

सकषायत्वाज्जीवः कर्मणो योग्यान्पुद्गलानादत्ते स बन्धः ॥ २ ॥

Sakasayatvajjivah karmano yogyan pudgala nadatte sa bandhah

The soul owing to its being with passion assimilates matter which is fit to form karmas This (is) बन्ध *bondage*

SUTRA 3

प्रकृतिस्थित्यनुभागप्रदेशास्तद्विधयः ॥ ३ ॥

Prakriti sthityanubhagapradeshastadvidhayah

(There are 4) kinds of that (bondage) according to

1 प्रकृति *Prakriti* Nature of karmic matter e g ज्ञानावरणी knowledge-obscuring or दर्शनावरणी conation-obscuring etc

2 स्थिति *Sthiti* Duration of the attachment of karmic matter to the soul

3 अनुभव *Aunbhava* The fruition being strong or mild (also called अनुभाग *Anubhaga*)

4 प्रदेश *Pradesha* The number of karma varganas or karmic molecules which attach to the soul

The first and the last are caused by योग *yoga* vibratory activity of the soul and middle two by कषाय passions

SUTRA 4

आद्यो ज्ञानदर्शनावरणवेदनीयमोहनीयायुर्नामगोत्रान्तरायाः ॥ ४ ॥

Adyo jnanadarshanavaranavedaniyamohaniyayurnamagotrantarayah

The main divisions of the nature of karmic matter are 8

1 ज्ञानावरण *Jnanavarana*, knowledge-obscuring
2 दर्शनावरण *Darshanavarana* conation obscuring
3 वेदनीय *Vedaniya* Feeling karma
4 मोहनीय *Mohaniya* Deluding
5 आयु *Ayu* Age
6 नाम *Nama* Body making
7 गोत्र *Gotra* Family determinig
8 अन्तराय *Antaraya* Obstructive

SUTRA 5

पञ्चनवद्व्यष्टाविंशतिचतुर्द्विचत्वारिंशद्द्विपञ्चभेदा यथाक्रमम् ॥ ५ ॥

Panchanavadvyastavinsatichaturdvichatvarimsaddvipanchabheda yatha karmam

(They are of) 5 9 2 28 4 42 2 5 classes respectively

This 42 has been classified into 93 so that sub classes come to 148

SUTRA 6

मतिश्रुतावधिमनःपर्ययकेवलानाम् ॥ ६ ॥

Matisrutavadhimanah paryaya kevalanam

(ज्ञानावरण *Jnanavarana* knowledge obscuring is of 5 kinds according as it is)

1 मति (ज्ञानावरण) *Mati Janavarana* Sensitive (knowledge obscuring)
2 श्रुत (ज्ञानावरण) *Shrut Jnanavarana*, Scriptural (knowledge-obscuring
3 अवधि (ज्ञानावरण) *Avadhi-jnanavarna* Visual (knowledge obscuring)

4 मन पयव (ज्ञानावरण) *Manahparyavya-jnanavarana* Mental (knowledge-obscuring)
5 केवल (ज्ञानावरण) *Kevala jnanavarana* Perfect (knowledge obscuring)

SUTRA 7

चक्षुरचक्षुरवधिकेवलाना निद्रानिद्रानिद्राप्रचलाप्रचलाप्रचला स्त्यानगृद्धयश्च ॥ ७ ॥

Chaksura chaksura-vadhi kevalanam nidrahidranidrapra chalaprachalstyanagrddhapasch, kadafeduedye

(दर्शनावरण *Darshanavarana* Conation obscuring is of 9 kinds according as it) obscures

1 *Ocular obscuring* (चक्षुदर्शनावरण) Chaksu Darshanavarana
2. *Non-ocular obscuring* (अचक्षुदर्शनावरण) Achaksu ,
3 Visual obscuring (अवधिदर्शनावरण) *Avadhi Darshanavarana*
4 Perfect conation obscuring (केवलदर्शनावरण) *Kevala* ,
(And 5 kinds of sleep)
1 Sleep, (निद्रा) *Nidra*
2 Deep sleep (निद्रानिद्रा) *Nidranidra*
3 Drowsiness, (प्रचला) *Prachala*
4 Heavy drowsiness (प्रचलाप्रचला) *Prachala Prachala*, and
5 Somnambulism (स्त्यानगृद्धि) *Styangriddhi*

स्त्यानगृद्धि *Styaragriddhi* is so called because the activity of the person is manifested in sleep This is always associated with painful or undesirable conditions of mind According to Jainism it is attended with a kind of monomania i e with आर्तध्यान *Arta-dhyana* and with unrighteous or wicked concentration i e with रौद्रध्यान *raudra dhyana*

SUTRA 8

सदसद्वेद्ये ॥ ८ ॥

Sadasadvedye

(वेदनीय *Vedaniya* or feeling is of 2 kinds)

1 सातावेदनीय *Satavedaniya* Pleasure-bearing and
2 असातावेदनीय *Asatavedaniya* Pain-bearing

SUTRA 9

दर्शनचारित्रमोहनीयाकषायकषायवेदनीयाख्यास्त्रिद्विनवषोडशभेदाः सम्यक्त्व-
मिथ्यात्वतदुभयान्यकषायकषायौहास्यरत्यरतिशोकभयजुगुप्सास्त्रीपुन्नपुंसकवेदा
अनन्तानुबन्ध्यप्रत्याख्यानप्रत्याख्यानसंज्वलनविकल्पाश्चैकशः क्रोधमान
मायालोभाः ॥ ९ ॥

Darsana charitramohaniyakasayavedaniyakhyastridvi navasodasa bhedahsamyaktvamithyatvatadubhayanyakas ayakasayauhasyaratyaratisokabhayajugupsastripunna punsaka vedaanantanubandhya pratyakhyanapratyakhyana pratyakyanasamjvalana vikalpaschaikasahkrodhamana mayalobha

मोहनीय *Mohaniya* Deluding (is of 28 kinds the Primary divisions are two)

1 दर्शनमोहनीय *Darshanmohaniya* Right belief-deluding.

2. चारित्रमोहनीय *Charitramohaniya*, Right-belief-deluding

(Right conduct deluding 2 kinds)

1 अकषायवेदनीय *Akasaya vedaniya* or नोकषाय *Nokasaya*, with slight passions.

2 कषायवेदनीय *Kasaya vedaniya* with passions

(They are of) 3,2,9 16 (kinds respectively)

(Right-belief-deluding दर्शनमोहनीय is of 3 kinds)

1 मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva* Wrong belief

2. सम्यक् मिथ्यात्व *Samyakm thyatva* mixed wrong and right belief

3 सम्यक् प्रकृतिमिथ्यात्व *Samyak-prakriti-mithyatva* Right-belief with e slight defect, i e clouded by slight wrong belief

(Akasaya vedaniya or no-kasaya is of 9 kinds)

1. हास्य *Hasya* Risibl laughter producing

2. रति *Rati* Indulgence

3 अरति *Arati* Ennui Dis-satisfaction langour

4 शोक *Shoka* Sorrow

5 भय *Bhaya*, Fear

6 जुगुप्सा *Jugupsa* Disgust

स्त्रीवेद *Striveda* Famimine inclinations.

8 पुंवेद *Pumveda* masculine inclinations

9 नपुंसकवेद *Napunsakaveda*, Common inclinations
(कषायवेदनीय *Kasayavedaniya* is of 16 kinds)
(4 passions) क्रोध Anger, मान Pride, माया Deceit, लोभ Greed
Each of these is of 4 kinds

1 अनंतानुबंधी *Anantanubandhi* Error feeding or wrong beli assisting. These are so called because they keep the soule bound in संसार *Samsar*, which is called अनंत "*Ananta* and inf which the soul is kept wandering by these passions feeding its erroneous belief Ananta also means wrong belief And these Passions are called Anantanubandhi, because they nourish or feed wrong belief It is very lasting (like a stone-engraving.

2 अप्रत्याख्यान *Apratyakhyana* Partial vow-preventing It is less lasting (as a furrow)

3 प्रत्याख्यान *Pratyakhyana*, Total vow preventing It is mild (as a line in dust)

4 संज्वलन Samjvalana Perfect right conduct preventing It is very mild (as a line in water)
[Thus we get 16, i e, (4x4) kinds]

The 16 are examplified as follows
Anger is deep like a furrow in stone,
" " earth ,
" line , dust ,
" " water,

Pride is unbending like a mountain, bone wood, cane.
Deceit is crooked like a bamboo root, horn of a ram , stream of cow-water , hoof mark.
Greed is fast like crimson colour wheel-dirt, body-dirt, tarmeric colour
See Gommatasara-Jiva, Kanda Gatha, 283-286

SUTRA 10

नारकतैर्यग्योनमानुषदैवानि ॥ १० ॥

Narakatairagyonamanusadaivani

(आयु Ayu Age karma bondage is of 4 kinds,) *according* as it determines
The (1) नरक *Naraka*, Hellish,
(2) तिर्यक् *Tiryak* Sub human ,
(3) मनुष्य *Manusya*, Human, and
(4) देव *Deva*, Celestial (character of the soul s life
आयु *Ayu* is so-called because the soul एति Eti , comes to enter a new condition of existence

SUTRA 11

गतिजातिशरीराङ्गोपाङ्गनिर्माणबन्धनसंघातसंस्थानसंहननस्पर्शरसगन्धवर्णा-
नुपूर्व्यागुरुलघूपघातपरघातातपोद्योतोच्छ्वासविहायोगतयः प्रत्येकशरीरत्रससुभग-
सुस्वरशुभसूक्ष्मपर्याप्तिस्थिरादेययशःकीर्तिसेतराणि तीर्थकरत्वं च ॥ ११ ॥

Gatijatisharirangopanga nirmanabandhana sanghata samsthana samhanana sparsha rasagandha varnanupurvya guru laghupaghata paraghata tapo dyoto chchhvasa vihayo gatayah pratyeka sharira trasa subhaga susvara shubha suksma paryap tisthira deya yashah kirti setarani tirthakaratvam cha

(The नामकर्म *Namakarma* Body making bondage is of 42, i e with sud-classes of 93 kinds as they bring about their respective effect)

4 गति *Gati* Condition of existmce

- (1) नरक *Naraka* Hellish
- (2) तिर्यंच *Tiryancha*, Sub-human
- (3) मनुष्य *Manusya* Human.
- (4) देव *Deva* Celestial

Gati is so-called because by the operation of this karma the soul गच्छति *Gachchhati* goes from one to another condition of existence

5 जाति *Jati* Genus of beings

- (1) एकेन्द्रिय *Ekendriya* one sensed.
- (2) द्वीन्द्रिय *Dvi-indriya* two-sensed.
- (3) त्रीन्द्रिय *Tri-indriya* Three sensed
- (4) चतुरिन्द्रिय *Chatu -indriya* four sensed
- (5) पंचेन्द्रिय *Panch indriya* Five-sensed

Jati is a karma by the operation of which a soul is born in a class in which other souls of a similar condition are also grouped

5 शरीर *Sharira*, Bodies

- (1) औदारिक *Audarika* Physical.
- (2) वैक्रियिक *Vaikriyika* Fluid
- (3) आहारक *Aharaka* Aharaka
- (4) तैजस *Taijasa* Electric.
- (5) कार्मण *Karmana* Karmic

Sharira is the karma by the operation of which material molecules are set moving to form a particular body

6 आंगोपांग *Angopanga* Limbs and minor-limbs

- (1) औदारिक *Audarika* In physical bodies

(2) वैक्रियिक *Vaikriyika* In fluid bodies
(3) आहारक *Aharaka,* In aharaka bodies

1 निर्माण *Nirmana,* Proper formation of limbs and minor limbs in relation to their situation (स्थाननिर्माण *Sthana nirmana*) and Dimensions (प्रमाणनिर्माण *Pramana-nirmana*)

5 बन्धन *Bandhana,* 5 kinds of molecular bondage according as the body is

(1) औदारिक *Audarika,* Physical
(2) वैक्रियिक *Vaikriyika* Fluid
(3) आहारक *Aharaka,* Aharaka
(4) तैजस *Taijasa,* Electric.
(5) कार्मण *Karmana* Karmic

5 संघात *Sanghata* Interfusion of molecules of different kinds of bodies in weaving them with the soul It takes place in

(1) औदारिक *Audarika* Physical
(2) वैक्रियिक *Vaikriyika* Fluid
(3) आहारक *Aharaka,* Aharaka
(4) तैजस *Taijasa,* Electric, and
(5) कार्मण *Karmana* Karmic bodies

6 संस्थान *Samsthana* Figure of the body

(1) समचतुरस्र संस्थान *Sama-chaturasra samsthana* Perfect proportion all round
(2) न्यग्रोधपरिमण्डलसंस्थान *Nyagrodhaparimandala-samsthana* Like a banyan tree short in the lower extremities and large in the upper body
(3) स्वातिसंस्थान *Svati-samsthana* It is the reverse of the last
(4) कुब्जसंस्थान *Kubja-samsthana* Hunch-back.
(5) वामनसंस्थान *Vamana-samsthana* Dwarf
(6) हुण्डकसंस्थान *Hundaka samsthana* Quite disproportionate

6 संहनन *Samhanana* 6 kinds of skeleton or osseous structure

(1) वज्र ऋषभ नाराच संहनन *Vajra risabha naracha samhanana* Adamantine nerves joints (or amphiarthrodial articulation, when the bones are slightly moveable and united by an intervening substance) and bones
(2) वज्रनाराचसंहनन *Vajra naracha samhanana* Adamantine joints and bones
(3) नाराच *Narachsamhanana* Joints and bones Ordi- articulation and bones.

(4) [illegible] *Ardhanarachasamhanana* Semi-jointed bones. A form of articulation weaker than Naracha samhanana.

(5) [illegible] *Kilakasamhanana* Jointed bones. Synthetic articulation in which bones are immovably and directly united.

(6) [illegible] *Asamprapta-sripatika samhanana* Loosely jointed bones. Diarthrodial articulation in which bones may be more or less freely movable when the articular surfaces are covered with smooth cartilage and surrounded by a fibrous capsule. It is of the human body at this time.

8 [illegible] Sparsha Kinds of touch

(1) [illegible] Ushna, Hot
(2) [illegible] Shita Cold
(3) [illegible] Snigdha Smooth
(4) [illegible] *Ruksha*, Rough
(5) [illegible] Mridu Soft
(6) [illegible] *Karkasha* Hard
(7) [illegible] Laghu Light
(8) [illegible] *Guru* Heavy

5 [illegible] Rasa Kinds of taste
(1) [illegible] *Tikta* Pungent
(2) [illegible] *Katuka* Bitter
(3) [illegible] Kashaya Astringent
(4) [illegible] *Amla* Sour
(5) [illegible] *Madhura* Sweet

2 [illegible] Gandha Smell

(1) [illegible] Sugandha Sweet smelling
(2) [illegible] Durgandha Bad smelling

5 [illegible] Varna Colours
(1) [illegible] Shukla White
(2) [illegible] Krishna Black
(3) [illegible] Nila Blue
(4) [illegible] Rakta Red
(5) [illegible] Pita Yellow

4 [illegible] Anupurvi The power of [illegible] body in the last incarnation [illegible] i.e. the power of [illegible] movement to the next Rebirth [illegible]

tions of existence to which the soul is proceeding

(1) नरकगत्यानुपूर्वी *Narkagatyanupurvi* Hellish

(2) तिर्यग्गत्यानुपूर्वी *Triyaggatyanupurvi* Sub-human

(3) मनुष्यगत्यानुपूर्वी *Manusyagatyanupurvi* Human

(4) देवगत्यानुपूर्वी *Devagatyanupurvi* Celestial

Narakagatyanupurvi means retaining form of previous life before hellish one and so on

अगुरुलघु *Agurulaghu* Neither too heavy to move nor too light to have stability

उपघात *Upaghata* The possession of a self-destructive limb or organ which becomes the cause of one s own death. As a kind of stag with horns which when they become too heavy, cause his death

परघात *Paraghata* Possessed of a limb or organ fatal to others *e g*, the sting of a scorpian, etc

आतप *Atapa.* Radiant heat Possessed of a body which is brilliant and bearable to the owner but intolerable and heating for the others Such as the gross earth bodied souls in the Sun from which sunshine comes

[Hot light like Sun shine]

उद्योत *Udyota* Phosphorescence An illuminated body like that of the fire-fly Such as the earth-bodied souls in the moon

[Cold light like Moon-shine]

उच्छ्वास *Uchchhvasa* Respiration

2 विहायोगति *Vihayogati* Capacity of moving in आकाश, space This is of 2 kinds

(1) शुभविहायोगति *Shubhavihayogati* Graceful like that of a swan

(2) अशुभविहायोगति *Ashubhavihayogati* Awkward

प्रत्येकशरीर *Pratyeksharira* A body possessed and enjoyable by one soul only as a mango

साधारणशरीर *Sadharanasharira* One body possessed and enjoyable by many souls ; as a potato etc

त्रस *Trasa* Mobile. Having a body with 2 3 4 5 senses

स्थावर, *Sthavara* Immobile Having a body with one sense only *i e* touch

सुभग *Subhaaga* Amiable personality even though not beautiful.

दुर्भग *Durbhaga* Unprepossessing even though beautiful
सुस्वर, *Susvara* Sweet-voiced Pleasing toned, with musical voice
दुःस्वर, *Duhsvara* Harsh-voiced
शुभ, *Shubha* Beautiful body
अशुभ, *Ashubha* Ugly body
सूक्ष्म *Shuksma* Fine body uncuttable all pervasive
बादर *Badara* Gross-body

पर्याप्ति *Paryapti* Within one अन्तर्मुहूर्त Antarmuhurta, the gaining by the soul of the capacity to develop fully the characteristics of the body into which it incarnates The developments are of 6 kinds; 1st 4 only in one-sensed souls; 1st 5 in 2, 3 4 and 5 sensed souls but only in 5 sensed souls without mind (असंज्ञि *Asanjni*) all the 6 in others.

1 आहारपर्याप्ति *AharaParyapti* In taking of the molecules to make the body
2 शरीरपर्याप्ति *Sharira Paryapti* Development of body
3 इन्द्रियपर्याप्ति *Indriya Paryapti* Development of sensed organs.
4 प्राणापानपर्याप्ति *PranapanaParyapti* Development of respiratory organs
5 भाषापर्याप्ति, *Bhasa Paryapti* Development of vocal organs.
6 मनपर्याप्ति *Mana Paryapti*; Development of the organs of the mind अपर्याप्ति Aparyapti To die within one अन्तर्मुहूर्त *Antarmuhurta* without gaining the above.

स्थिर *Sthira* Steady circulation of blood bile, etc, *e g.* among men Steady circulation etc relates to 7 kinds of धातु *Dhatu* primary physiological matter; i e

(1) रस *Rasa* Juice
(2) रक्त *Rakta* Blood
(3) मांस *Mansa* Flesh
(4) मेद *Meda* Fat
(5) अस्थि *Asthi* Bone
(6) मज्जा *Majja* Marrow
(7) शुक्र *Shukra* Semen virile

The nutrition taken in is transformed into these 7 gradually in 30 days From one to the other the transformation takes 30/7 = 4 2/7 days

The 7 kinds of उपधातु *Upadhatu* or secondary physiological matter are

(1) वात *Vata* Wind
(2) पित्त, Pitta
(3) श्लेष्म, *Shlesma*, Phlegm.

(4) सिरा, *Shira* A tubular vessel of the body, as vein
(5) स्नायु *Snayu*, Muscle
(6) चम, *Charma*, Skin
(7) उदराग्नि, *Udaragni*, Digestive fire of the stomach, gastric fluid

All these remain steady where they ought to be, by the operation स्थिरनामकर्म *Sthira-nama karma*

अस्थिर *Asthira* unsteady circulation of blood bile, etc, *e g*, among women

आदेय, *Adeya* Radiant appearance so as to effect others

अनादेय *Anadeya* Dull appearance

यश कीर्ति *Yashahkirti* Bringing good fame

अयशःकीर्ति, *Ayashahkirti* Bringing bad name even if he does good actions

तीर्थंकर *Tirthakara* A Tirthankara's career with all its grandeur, when He preaches and completes His ministry

SUTRA 12

उच्चैर्नीचैश्च ॥ १२

Uchchairnichaishcha

(गोत्रकर्म *Gotra* or Family-determining karma is of 2 kinds
(1) उच्चगोत्र *Uchchagotra* High and
(2) नीचगोत्र *Nichagotra* Low

SUTRA 13

दानलाभभोगोपभोगवीर्याणाम् ॥ १३ ॥

Danalabhabhogopabhogaviryanam

(अन्तरायकर्म *Antaraya* or Obstructive karma is of 5 kinds as it obstructs)

(1) दानान्तराय *Danantaraya* Charity
(2) लाभान्तराय *Labhantaraya* Gain
(3) भोगान्तराय *Bhogantaraya* Enjoyment of consumable things
(4) उपभोगान्तराय *Upabhogantaraya* Enjoyment of nonconsumable things
(5) वीर्यान्तराय *Viryantaraya* Exercise of one's capacities; power

Note—The प्रकृति *Prakriti* or nature of the bondage is finished here. Now we go on to consider the duration of the bondage

SURTA 14

आदितस्तिसृणामन्तरायस्य च त्रिंशत्सागरोपमकोटीकोट्य परा स्थिति ॥ १४ ॥

Aditastisrinamantarayasya cha trinshatsagropamakotik-otyah para sthiti

The maximum duration of the 3 from the first (i e ज्ञानावरणीय knowledge-obscuring दर्शनावरणीय Conation obscuring and वेदनीय Feeling karmas) and of अन्तराय Obstructive karmas is 30 crore × crore सागर *Sagaras*

This is possible in a rational 5 sensed fully developed (पर्याप्त *paryapta*) soul and having wrong belief (मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva*)

SUTRA 15

सप्ततिर्मोहनीयस्य ॥ १५ ॥

Saptatirmohaniyasya

(The maximum duration) of मोहनीय Deluding karma (is) 70 (crore × crore sagaras.)

SUTRA 16

विंशतिर्नामगोत्रयो ॥ १६ ॥

Vinshatirnamagotrayoh

(The maximum duration) of नाम *Nama* Body making and गोत्र *Gotra* Family-determining (kasmas is) 20 (crore × crore सागर *Sagars* for each.)

This is also possible as above

SUTRA 17

त्रयस्त्रिंशत्सागरोपमाण्यायुष ॥ १७ ॥

Trayastrinshatsagaropamanyayusah

(The maximum duration) of आयु *Ayu*, Age karma (is) 33 सागर *Sagaasr*,

(4) शिरा *Shira* A tubular vessel of the body, as vein
(5) स्नायु *Snayu*, Muscle
(6) चर्म, *Charma*, Skin.
(7) उदराग्नि *Udaragni* Digestive fire of the stomach; gastric fluid

All these remain steady where they ought to be, by the operation स्थिरनामकर्म *Sthira nama karma*

अस्थिर, *Asthira* unsteady circulation of blood bile, etc, e g, among women

आदेय *Adeya* Radiant appearance so as to effect others

अनादेय *Anadeya*. Dull appearance

यश कीर्ति *Yashahkirti* Bringing good fame

अयशःकीर्ति, *Ayashahkirti* Bringing bad name even if he does good actions.

तीर्थंकर *Tirthakara* A Tirthankara's career, with all its grandeur, when He preaches and completes His ministry

SUTRA 12

उच्चैर्नीचैश्च ॥ १२

Uchchairnichaishcha

(गोत्रकर्म *Gotra* or Family-determining karma is of 2 kinds·
(1) उच्चगोत्र *Uchchagotra* High; and
(2) नीचगोत्र *Nichagotra* Low

SUTRA 13

दानलाभभोगोपभोगवीर्याणाम् ॥ १३ ॥

Danalabhabhogopabhogaviryanam

(अन्तराय *Antaraya* or Obstructive karma is of 5 kinds, as it obstructs)

(1) दानान्तराय *Danantaraya* Charity
(2) लाभान्तराय *Labhantaraya* Gain
(3) भोगान्तराय *Bhogantaraya* Enjoyment of consumable things
(4) उपभोगान्तराय *Upabhogantaraya* Enjoyment of nonconsumable things
(5) वीर्यान्तराय *Viryantaraya* Exercise of one's capacities power

Note—The प्रकृति *Prakriti* or nature of the bondage is finished here. Now we go on to consider the duration of the bondage

SURTA 14

आदितस्तिसृणामन्तरायस्य च त्रिंशत्सागरोपमकोटीकोट्य परा स्थिति ॥ १४ ॥

Aditastisrinamantarayasya cha trinshatsagropamakotik-otyah para sthiti

The maximum duration of the 3 from the first (i e ज्ञानावरणीय knowledge-obscuring दर्शनावरणीय Conation obscuring and वेदनीय Feeling karmas) and of अन्तराय Obstructive karmas is 30 crore × crore सागर *Sagaras*

This is possible in a rational 5 sensed fully developed (पर्याप्त *paryapta*) soul, and having wrong belief (मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva.*)

SUTRA 15

सप्ततिर्मोहनीयस्य ॥ १५ ॥

Saptatirmohaniyasya

(The maximum duration) of मोहनीय Deluding karma (is) 70 (crore × crore sagaras)

SUTRA 16

विंशतिर्नामगोत्रयो ॥ १६ ॥

Vinshatirnamagotrayoh

(The maximum duration) of नाम *Nama* Body making and गोत्र, *Gotra* Family-determining (kasmas is) 20 (crore × crore सागर *Sagars* for each)

This is also possible as above

SUTRA 17

त्रयस्त्रिंशत्सागरोपमाण्यायुष ॥ १७ ॥

Trayastrinshatsagaropamanyayusah

(The maximum duration) of आयु *Ayu* Age karma (is) 33 सागर *Sagaasr*

SUTRA 18

अपरा द्वादशमुहूर्ता वेदनीयस्य ॥ १८ ॥

Aparadvadashamuhurta vedanıyasya

(The minimum duration) of वेदनीय, *Vedaniya*, Feeling karma (is) 12 मुहूर्त *Muhurtas*=12x48 minutes

SUTRA 19

नामगोत्रयोरष्टौ ॥ १९ ॥

Namagotrayorastau

(That) of नाम *Nama* Body-making and गोत्र *Gotra*, Family determining (is) 8 (मुहूर्त *Muhurtas*)

SUTRA 20

शेषाणामन्तर्मुहूर्ता ॥ २० ॥

Shesanamantarmuhurta

Of all the rest (The minimum is) one अन्तर मुहूर्त *Antar-muhurta* (which ranges from 1 समय *Samaya* and 1 आवली *Avali* at the lowest to 48 minutes—1 समय *Samaya*

SUTRA 21

विपाकोऽनुभव ॥ २१ ॥

Vipakoanaubhavah

अनुभव *Anubhava* (is the maturing and) fruition of karmas

SUTRA 22

सयथानाम् ॥ २२ ॥

Sa yathanama

That (fruition is) according to the name (of the karma.) *e g*, ज्ञानावरणीय knowledge-obscuring karma prevents the acquisition of knowledge and so on.

SUTRA 23

ततश्च निर्जरा ॥ २३ ॥

Tatashch i nirjara

After that (fruition the karmas fall off That is निर्जरा *Nirjara* It is of 2 kinds

1. सविपाक *Savipaka* where the soul in the maturity of time i rid of the karmas by their operating and falling off from it
2. अविपाक *Avipaka* when by force of ascetic practices etc (तप *Tapa etc*) The karmas which had not yet matured t operate are induced to fall off from the soul

SUTRA 24

नामप्रत्ययाः सर्वतो योगविशेषात्सूक्ष्मैकक्षेत्रावगाहस्थिताः सर्वात्मप्रदेशेष्वनन्तानन्तप्रदेशाः ॥ २४ ॥

Namapratyayah sarvato yogavishesatsuksmaikaksetrava gahasthitah sarvatmapradeshesvanantanantapradeshal

(According to the nature caused by their names from all roun due to the difference in the vibrations (योग *Yoga*) in the soul activit not perceptible by the senses the karmic molecules enter and becom one and stay with every moment to each soul

The particular number of the molecules actually absorbed called प्रदेशबंध *pradesha bandha*

SUTRA 25

सद्वेद्यशुभायुर्नामगोत्राणि पुण्यम् ॥ २५ ॥

Sadvedyashubhayurnamagotrani punyam

पुण्य *Punya* or meritorious karmas (are the following.)

1. सद्वेद्य *Sadvedya* or सातावेदनीय *Satavedaniya* pleasure-bearing
2. शुभायु *Shubhayu*; good age-karma.
3. शुभनाम *Shubha nama* good body making karma.
4. शुभगोत्र *Shubha gotra*; high family-determining

Their sub classes are 42

1. सातावेदनीय, *Sata vedaniya.* Pleasure-bearing
2. शुभायु *Shubhayu*; 1 तिर्यञ्च *Tiryancha* Sub-human
   2 मनुष्य *Manusya* Human
   3 देव Deva Celestial

37 शुभनाम *Shubhanama*

2 गति *Gatis* (1) Human (2) Celestial

1 जाति *Jati* 5 sensed (genus of feelings)

3 शरीर *Sharira* all 5 bodies

3 आंगोपांग *Angopanga* all 3 limbs and organs

1 संस्थान *Samsthana* perfect proportion समचतुरस्र स्था-

1 संहनन *Samhanana* the highest वज्र ऋषभ नाराच संहनन

1 स्पर्श *Sparsha*		
1 रस *Rasa*	}	When they are *Subha* (शुभ)
1 गंध *Gandha*		
1 वर्ण *Varna*		

2 आनुपूर्वी *Anupurvis* human and celestial

1 अगुरुलघु *Agurulaghu*

1 परघात *Paraghata*

1 उच्छ्वास *Uchchhvasa*

1 आतप *Atapa*

1 उद्योत *Udyota*

1 विहायोगति *Vihayogati* i e Shubha

1 त्रस *Trasa*

1 बादर *Badara*

1 पर्याप्ति *Paryapati*

1 प्रत्येक शरीर *Pratyeka-sharira*

1 स्थिर *Sthira*

1 शुभ *Shubha*

1 सुभग *Shubhaga*

1 सुस्वर *Susvara*

1 आदेय *Adeya*

1 यश कीर्ति *Yashah-kirti*

1 निर्माण *Nirmana* (Shubha)

1 तीर्थंकर *Tirthakar* [For the meaning of all these see Sutra 11 above]

1 उच्चगोत्र *Uchchagotra* High family

---

42 Total

SUTRA 26

अतोऽन्यत्पापम् ॥ २६ ॥

Atoanyatpapam

(The karmas) other than these (are) पाप *Papa* (or demeritorious karmas)

अध्याय नवां

CHAPTER IX

SUTRA 1

आस्रवनिरोध संवर ॥ १ ॥

Ashravanirodhah samvarah

संवर *Samvara* (is) the stoppage of inflow of karmic matter into the soul

The causes of Inflow and Bondage are given in Ch VIII Sutra I

Wrong belief (Mithyadarshana) is stopped (Samvara) in the 4th spiritual stage (Gunasthana),

Vowlessness (Avirati) in the 5th and 6th,
Carelessness (Pramada) in the 7th;
Passion (Kasaya) in the 8th 9th and 10th;
Vibration (Yoga) in the 14th stage
For the 14th Spiritual Stages see Ch. X Sutra 2.

SUTRA 2

स गुप्तिसमितिधर्मानुप्रेक्षापरीषहजयचारित्र ॥ २ ॥

Sa guptisamitidharmanupreksaparisahajayacharitrai

It (is produced by)

3	kinds of गुप्ति *Gupti*	Preservation
5	समिति *Samiti*	Carefulness
10	धर्म *Dharma*	Observances, (Dharma)
12	अनुप्रेक्षा *Anupreksa*	Meditation
22	परिषह जय *Parisah-jaya*	Subdual of sufferings and
5	चारित्र *Charitra*	Conduct

SUTRA 3

तपसा निर्जरा च ॥ ३ ॥

Tapasa nirjara cha

By austerities (is caused) shedding of karmic matter and (also stoppage of inflow)

SUTRA 4

सम्यग्योगनिग्रहो गुप्ति ॥ ४ ॥

Samyagyoganigrahoguptih

गुप्ति *Gupti* Prevention (is) proper control (nigraha) over mind speech वचन and body काय

SUTRA 5

ईर्याभाषैषणादाननिक्षेपोत्सर्गा समितय ॥ ५ ॥

Eryabhasaisanadananiksepotsargah samitayah

समिति *Samiti* Carefulness (is) to take
(सम्यक् ईर्यासमिति) *Samyakiryasamiti* Proper care in walking
(सम्यक्भाषासमिति) *Samyakbhasasamiti* speaking
(सम्यग्एषणासमिति) *Samyakesanasamiti* eating
(सम्यग्आदाननिक्षेप समिति) *Samyakadananiksepasamiti* Proper care in lifting and laying
(सम्यग्उत्सर्ग समिति), *Samyakutsargasamiti* Proper care in excreting

SUTRA 6

उत्तमक्षमामार्दवार्जवशौचसत्यसंयमतपस्त्यागाकिञ्चन्यब्रह्मचर्याणि धर्म ॥ ६ ॥

Uttamaksamamardavarjava shauchasatyasamyama tapastyaga kinchanyabrahmacharyani dharmah

(The दशलाक्षणधर्म 10 Observances are)
उत्तमक्षमा *Uttama-ksama* Forgiveness
उत्तममार्दव *Uttama mardava* Humility
उत्तमआर्जव *Uttama arjava* Straight-forwardness, (Honesty)
उत्तमशौच *Uttama shaucha* Contentment
उत्तम सत्य *Uttama satya* Truth
उत्तम संयम *Uttama samyama* Restraint
उत्तम तप *Uttama tapa* Austerities
उत्तम त्याग *Uttama tyaga* Renunciation
उत्तमआकिंचन्य *Uttama Akimchanya* Not taking the non-self for one's own self [non attachment] and
उत्तमब्रह्मचर्य *Uttama-brahmacharya* Chastity, all of the highest degree.

SUTRA 7

अनित्याशरणसंसारैकत्वान्यत्वाशुच्यास्रवसंवरनिर्जरालोकबोधिदुर्लभधर्मस्वा-
ख्याततत्त्वानुचिन्तनमनुप्रेक्षाः ॥ ७ ॥

Anityasharanasamsaraikatvanyatvashuchyasravasamvaranirjaralokabodhidurlabhadharmasvakhyatattvanuchintanamanupreksah

(The अनुप्रेक्षा 12 meditations are)

1 अनित्यानुप्रेक्षा *Anityanupreksa* Everything is subject to change or transitory

2. अशरणानुप्रेक्षा *Asharananupreksa* Unprotectiveness Helplessness The soul is unprotected from the fruition of karmas *e g* death etc

3 संसारानुप्रेक्षा *Samsaranupreksa* Mundaneness Soul moves in the cycle of existences and cannot attain true happiness till he is out of it.

4 एकत्वानुप्रेक्षा *Ekatvanupreksa*, Loneliness. I am alone the doer of my actions and the enjoyer of the fruits of them.

5 अन्यत्वानुप्रेक्षा *Anyatvanupreksa* Separateness. Otherness The world, my relations and friends my body and mind they are all distinct and separate from my real self

6 अशुच्यनुप्रेक्षा *Ashuchyanupreksa*, Impurity The body is impure and dirty Purity is of 2 kinds of the soul itself, and of the body and other things This last is of 8 kinds.

7 आस्रवानुप्रेक्षा *Asravanupreksa* Inflow The inflow of karmas is the cause of my mundane existence and it is the product of Passions etc

8 संवरानुप्रेक्षा *Samvaranupreksa* Stoppage The inflow must be stopped

9 निर्जरानुप्रेक्षा *Nirjaranupreksa* Shedding Karmic matter must shed from or shaken out of the soul

10 लोकानुप्रेक्षा *Lokanupreksa* Universe The nature of the Universe and its constituent elements

11 बोधिदुर्लभानुप्रेक्षा *Bodhidurlabhanupreksa*, Rarity of Right Path It is difficult to attain right belief knowledge and conduct

12. धर्मस्वाख्यातत्वानुप्रेक्षा *Dharmasvakhyatatvanupreksa* Nature of Right Path The true nature of Truth *i e* the 3 fold path to real Liberation

(These must be) meditated upon again and again As to the first kind of meditation viz transitoriness अनित्यानुप्रेक्षा, anityanupreksa it must be noted that as Substance every thing is permanent Only पर्याय condition is transitory Of the matter assimilated as karma and by the soul that which is accepted by the soul is called उपात्त *Upatta* The rest is अनुपात्त *Anupatta* matter which is not taken in by the soul

SUTRA 8

मार्गाच्यवननिर्जरार्थं परिषोढव्या परिषहा ॥ ८ ॥

Margachyavananirjarartham parisodhavyah parisahah

For the sake of now falling-off from the path (of Liberation,) and for the shedding (of Karmic matter whatever sufferings are) undergone (are called) the परिषह Sufferings'

SUTRA 9

क्षुत्पिपासाशीतोष्णदंशमशकनाग्न्यारतिस्त्रीचर्यानिषद्याशय्याक्रोशवधया-चनाऽलाभरोगतृणस्पर्शमलसत्कारपुरस्कारप्रज्ञाज्ञानाऽदर्शनानि ॥ ९ ॥

Ksutpipasashitosnadamshamasakanagnyarati stricharyanisa dyashayyakroshavadhayachanaalabhaarogatrnasparshamala-satkara puraskaraprajnaajnanadarshnani

(The 22 परिषह Sufferings are)

1 क्षुद Hunger
2 पिपासा Thirst
3 शीत, Cold
4 उष्ण, Heat
5 दंश मशक, Insect bites, mosquitoes etc
6 नाग्न्य *Nakedness*
7 अरति Ennui, dissatisfaction languor
8 स्त्री Women
9 चर्या Walking too much, not to feel the fatigue but to bear it calmly
10 निषद्या *Sitting* Not to disturb the posture of meditation even if there is danger from lion snake etc etc.
11 शय्या *Sleeping* Resting on the hard earth
12 आक्रोश Abuse
13 वध, Beating

14 याचना (or याञ्चा), Begging (To refrain from begging even in need.)
15 अलाभ, Failure to get alms
16 रोग Disease
17 तृणस्पर्श Contact with thorny shrubs, etc
18. मल *Dirt* Discomfort from dust, etc.
19 सत्कार पुरस्कार Respect or disrespect
20 प्रज्ञा Conceit of knowledge
21 अज्ञान Lack of knowledge
22. अदर्शन Slack belief *e g* on failure to attain supernatural powers

SUTRA 10

सूक्ष्मसाम्परायछद्मस्थवीतरागयोश्चतुर्दश ॥ १० ॥

Suksmasamparayachhadmasthavitaragayoshchaturdasha

In सूक्ष्मसाम्पराय, *Suksmasamparaya* (the stage of) Slight Passions (i e where all the passions have subsided or are destroyed except the slightest greed) (In) छद्मस्थवीतराग *Chhadmasthavitaraga* (उपशान्तमोह *Upashantamoha*) where all the passions are suppressed (In क्षीणमोह Ksinamoha where all the passions are destroyed i e to beings in the 10th 11th and 12th stages of Spirituality only) 14 (are possible i e all except the 8 sufferings due to deluding karmas viz

(1) नाग्न्य Nakedness
(2) अरति Ennui dissatisfaction etc
(3) स्त्री Women
(4) निषद्या, Sitting or posture
(5) आक्रोश Abuse
(6) याचना Begging
(7) सत्कारपुरस्कार Respect and disrespect
(8) अदर्शन, Slack belief

SUTRA 11

एकादश जिने ॥ ११ ॥

Ekadasha jine

To जिन *Jina*, Arhat (i e in the 13th गुणस्थान *Gunasthana* spiritual stage the 4 घातियाकर्म, *Ghatiyakarmas* destructive karmas having been destroyed only) 11 (sufferings are possible They are due to वेदनीय, *Vedaniya* karma They are)

(1) Hunger
(2) Thirst
(3) Cold
(4) Heat
(5) Insect-bites
(6) Walking
(7) Hard earth-bed
(8) Beating
(9) Disease
(10) Contact with thorny shrubs etc
(11) Dirt

But as a rule because the मोहनीय *Mohaniya* Deluding and अन्तराय, *Antaraya* Obstructive Karmas are destroyed these sufferings hardly ever arise

SUTRA 12

वादरसाम्पराये सर्वे ॥ १२ ॥

Vadarasamparaye sarve

To बादरसाम्पराय, *Vadarasamparaya*, the saints (who are below the 10th stage गुणस्थान, i e who are in the 6th 7th, 8th or 9th stages of spirituality and) with slightly gross passions, all (the 22 परिषह Sufferings are possibe)

SUTRA 13

ज्ञानावरणे प्रज्ञाज्ञाने ॥१३ ॥

Jnanavarane prajnajnane

प्रज्ञा Conceit and अज्ञान Lack of knowledge ; sufferings (are caused) by (the operation of) ज्ञानावरणीय, Knowledge-obscuring Karmas

SUTRA 14

दर्शनमोहान्तराययोरदर्शनालाभौ ॥ १४ ॥

Darshanamohantarayayoradarshana la bhau

अदर्शन Slack-belief (by) दर्शनमोहनीय right-belief-deluding, and failure to get alms by अन्तराय Obstructive karma

SUTRA 15

चारित्रमोहेनाग्न्यारतिस्त्रीनिषद्याक्रोशयाचनासत्कारपुरस्काराः ॥ १५ ॥

Charitramohanagnyaratistrinisadyakroshayachanasatkara-puraskarah

Nakedness, Ennui Woman, Sitting or Posture Abuse Begging Respect and disrespect (sufferings are due to) चारित्रमोहनीय right-conduct deluding karmas

SUTRA 16

वेदनीये शेषाः ॥ १६ ॥

Vedaniyeshesah

The rest (are caused) by वेदनीय, Vedaniya Karmas (They are 11 and given in the 11 th Sutra above)

SUTRA 17

एकादयो भाज्या युगपदेकस्मिन्नैकोनविंशतिः ॥ १७ ॥

Ekadayobhajyayugapadekasminnaikonavinshati

From 1 to 19 at one and the same time can be possible to a taint (but not more than 19)

This is obvious for there are 2 sets of contradictory sufferings which can not co-exist as

Heat and Cold
Sitting and walking and sleeping on hard earth

SUTRA 18

सामायिकच्छेदोपस्थापनापरिहारविशुद्धिसूक्ष्मसाम्पराययथाख्यातमिति
चारित्रम् ॥ १८ ॥

Sa nayikachchhedopasthapanapariharavishuddhisuksmasampar ayayathakhyatamiti charitram

(The 5 kinds of) सम्यक् चारित्र Right conduct (are)

(1) सामायिक Equanimity
(2) छेदोपस्थापना Recovery of equanimity after a fall from it
(3) परिहारविशुद्धि Pure and absolute non injury
(4) सूक्ष्मसाम्पराय All but entire freedom from passion
(5) यथाख्यात Ideal and passionless conduct

परिहारविशुद्धि Parihara vishuddhi is found only in a man of 37 or 38

years, who has served the नवेर Tirthankar for 7 or 8 years, i e, from the age of 30 to that of 37 or 38 He must have read the प्रत्याख्यानपूर्व *Pratyakhyanapurva* See Jiva-Kanda Gatha 171-2

SUTRA 19

अनशनावमौदर्यवृत्तिपरिसंख्यानरसपरित्यागविविक्तशय्यासनकायक्लेशा बाह्य तप ॥ १९ ॥

Anashanavamodaryyavritti-parisankhyanarasaparityagaviviktashaypasana kayakhsa bahyam tapah

(तप *Tapa* austerities are बाह्य external and अभ्यन्तर internal)

External austerities (are 6)

1 अनशन Anshana, Fasting
2 अवमौदर्य, *Avamodaryya*, Eating less than one s fill, than one has appetite for
3 वृत्तिपरिसंख्यान *Vritti-parisankhyana* Taking a mental vow to accept food from a house-holder only if a certain condition is fulfilled without letting any one know about the vow
4 रसपरित्याग *Rasaparityaga*, Daily renunciation of one or more of 6 kinds of delicacies *viz*
   1 Ghee (Butter, clarified butter)
   2 Milk
   3 Curd
   4 Sugar
   5 Salt
   6 Oil
5 विविक्तशय्यासन, *Vivikta-shayyashana* Sitting and sleeping in lonely place, devoid of animate beings
6 कायक्लेश *Kayaklesha*, Mortification of the body, so long as the mind is not disturbed

SUTRA 20

प्रायश्चित्तविनय वैयावृत्यस्वाध्यायव्युत्सर्गध्यानान्युत्तरम् ॥ २० ॥

Prayashchittavinayavaiyavrtyasvadhyayavyutsargadhy ananyuttaram

The other (i e Internal austerities are also 6

1 प्रायश्चित्त *Prayashchitta* Expiation
2 विनय *Vinaya* Reverence
3 वैयावृत्य *Vaiyavritya* Service (of the saints or worthy people)

4 स्वाध्याय *Svadhyaya* Study
5 व्युत्सर्ग *Vyutsarga*, Giving up attachment to the body etc
6 ध्यान *Dhyana* Concentration

SUTRA 21

नवचतुर्दशपञ्चद्विभेदा यथाक्रम प्राग्ध्यानात् ॥ २१ ॥

Navahcaturdashapanchadvibhedayathakramam pragdhhyanat

(The अभ्यन्तर तप Internal austerities) previous to ध्यान Concentration (are respectively of) 9 4 10 5 and 2 kinds

SUTRA 22

आलोचनाप्रतिक्रमणतदुभयविवेकव्युत्सर्गतपश्छेद परिहारोपस्थापना ॥ २२ ॥

Alochanapratikramanatadubhayavivekavyutsarga-paschhedapariharopasthapanah

(The 9 kinds of प्रायश्चित expiation are

1 आलोचन *Alochana* Full and voluntary confession to the head of the order
2 प्रतिक्रमण *Pratikramana* Self analysis and repentance for faults
3 तदुभय *Tadubhaya* Doing both
4 विवेक *Viveka* Giving up a much beloved object as a particular food or drink
5 व्युत्सर्ग *Vyutsarga* Giving up attachment to the body
6 तप *Tapa* Austerities of a particular kind prescribed in a penance
7 छेद *Chheda* Cutting short the standing of a saint by way of degradation
8 परिहार *Parihara* Rustication for some time
9 उपस्थापन, *Upasthapana* Fresh re admission after expulsion from the order

Any of the above 9 penances is prescribed by the Head according to the transgression in a particular case

SUTRA 23

ज्ञानदर्शनचारित्रोपचारा ॥ २३ ॥

Jnanadarshanacharitropacharah

(विनय Reverence is of 4 kinds)

1 ज्ञानविनय, *Jnanavinaya* For right knowledge,
2. दर्शनविनय *Darshanavinaya*, For right-belief,
3 चारित्रविनय *Charitravinaya*, For right-conduct and
4 उपचारविनय *Upacharavinaya*, by observing proper forms of respect as folding the hands bowing etc etc,

SUTRA 24

आचार्योपाध्यायतपस्विशैक्षग्लानगणकुलसंघसाधुमनोज्ञानाम् ॥ २४ ॥

Acharyopadhyayatapasvishaiksyaglanagenakulasangha-sadhu manojnanam

(वैयावृत्त्य Service is of 10 kinds, as it relates to the)

1 आचार्य *Acharya* Head of an order of saints
2. उपाध्याय, *Upadhyaya*, Preceptor in an order of saints
3 तपस्वि *Trapasvi*, Saint who practises severe austerities as long fasts etc
4 शैक्ष्य, *Shaiksya* Student saint
5 ग्लान, *Glana* Invalid saints
6. गण *Gana* Brothers of the same order (gana)
7 कुल *Kula* Fellow-disciples of the same Head
8 संघ *Sangha* Whole order as such, (i e all the 4 classes of which the order consists
   (1) ऋषि, *Rishi* Saint with miraculous powers
   (2) यति *Yati* Saint with control over the senses
   (3) मुनि *Muni* Saint with Visual and Mental knowledge.
   (4) अनगार, *Anagara* Saint, a houseless ascetic.

   Or all the 4 classes of the community i e
   (1) यति, *Yati* Monk
   (2) आर्यिका, *Aryika* Nun
   (3) श्रावक, *Shravaka* Layman
   (4) श्राविका *Shravika* Lay-woman
9 साधु *Sadhu*, Saint (of long standing)
10 मनोज्ञ *Manojna* Popular saint

SUTRA 25

वाचनापृच्छनानुप्रेक्षाम्नायधर्मोपदेशाः ॥ २५ ॥

Vachanaprichchhananupreksamnayadharmopadeshah.

(स्वाध्याय *Svadhyaya* Study is of 5 kinds)

1 वाचना *Vachana*, Reading,

2. पृच्छना *Prichchhana* Questioning Inquiry on a Doubtful point
3. अनुप्रेक्षा *Anupreksha* Reflection or meditation on what is read
4. आम्नाय *Amnaya* Memorising and proper recitation
5. धर्मोपदेश *Dharmopadesha* Lecturing or delivering sermons

SUTRA 26

बाह्याभ्यन्तरोपध्योः ॥ २६ ॥

Bahyabhyantaropadhyoh

(व्युत्सर्ग *Vyutsarga* giving up attachment to wordly objects is of 2 kinds)

1. बाह्य उपधि *Bahya Upadhi* Of external (things)
2. अभ्यन्तरोपधि *Abhyantara upadhi* Of internal things (as the passions, etc)

SUTRA 27

उत्तमसंहननस्यैकाग्रचिन्तानिरोधो ध्यानमान्तर्मुहूर्तात् ॥ २७ ॥

Uttamasamhananasyaikagrachintanirodho dhyanamantarmuhurtat

ध्यान, *Dhyana* Concentration is confining (one's thought to one (particular object) (In a man) with a high-class constitution (of bone, nerves, etc. i e the first 3 out of the 6 संहनन *Samhananas* it lasts at the most for i e) upto one अन्तर्मुहूर्त *Antaramuhurta* (i e 48 minutes minus one समय, *Samaya*)

SUTRA 28

आर्तरौद्रधर्म्यशुक्लानि ॥ २८ ॥

Artaraudradharmashuklani

(It is of 4 kinds)

1. आर्तध्यान *Artadhyana* Painful concentration ; monomania
2. रौद्रध्यान *Rudradhyana* Wicked concentration on unrighteous gain etc
3. धर्मध्यान, *Dharmadhyana* Righteous concentration
4. शुक्लध्यान, *Shukladhyana.* Pure concentration. i e, concentration on the soul.

SUTRA 29

परे मोक्षहेतू ॥ २९ ॥

Pare moksahetu

The last two (धर्मध्यान, शुक्लध्यान) *Dharma and Shukla,* are the causes of Liberation (The other two आर्तध्यान, रौद्रध्यान are the causes of mundane bondage)

SUTRA 30

आर्तममनोज्ञस्य सम्प्रयोगे तद्विप्रयोगाय स्मृतिसमन्वाहार ॥ ३० ॥

Artamamanojnasya samprayoge tadviprayogaya smritisamanvaharah

आर्तध्यान Painful concentration or monomonia (is of 4 kinds) The first kind of) monomonia, (is अनिष्ट संयोगज *Anista samyogaja*), On connection with an unpleasing (object) to repeatedly think of separation from it

SUTRA 31

विपरीत मनोज्ञस्य ॥ ३१ ॥

Viparitam manojnasya

(The second monomania is its opposite i e इष्टवियोगज *Istaviyogaja*) (On being separated from a pleasing object, to repeatedly think of reunion with it)

SUTRA 32

वेदनायाश्च ॥ ३२ ॥

Vedanayashcha

The third monomania is

(पीडाचिन्तवन *Pida chintavana,*)(On being affeicted) by a disease or trouble (to be repeatedly thinking of becoming free from it)

SUTRA 33

निदान च ॥ ३३ ॥

Nidanam cha

(The fourth monomania is)

निदान *Nidano* (On being over anxious to) enjoy (worldly objects and not getting them in this world to repeatedly think of gaining them) in future

SUTRA 34

तदविरतदेशविरतप्रमत्तसयतानाम् ॥ ३४ ॥

Tadaviratadeshaviratapramattasamyatanam

That (आर्तध्यान Painful concentration is possible only to a man in any of the following stages of spirituality गुणस्थान,)

अविरत *Avirata* Vowless i. e in the first 4 stages

देशविरत *Deshavirata* With partial vows i e in the 5th stage,

प्रमत्तसंयत, *Pramattasamyata* Monk with some carelessness i e in the 6th stage

(But in this last there can be no nidana) A vowless person may be a wrong believer or a right believer Thus there are 4 kinds of souls for painful concentration viz, wrong believer ; right beleiver ; partial vower ; imperfect vower The concentration is worst in a wrong b liever and begins to be milder and milder on wards till we reach the man with all vows but which are kept imperfectly

SUTRA 35

हिंसानृतस्तेयविषयसंरक्षणेभ्यो रौद्रमविरतदेशविरतयो ॥३५॥

Himsanrtasteyavisayasamraksanebhyoraudramaviratad-eshaviratayoh

रौद्रध्यान Wicked concentration (is of 4 kinds)

1 हिंसानन्द *Hinsananda* Delight in hurtfulness
2 अनृतानन्द *Anritananda* Delight in falsehoods
3 स्तेयानन्द *Steyananda* Delight in theft
4 विषय संरक्षणानन्द *Visaya Sanraksanananda* Delight in preservation of objects of sense-enjoyments

(This is possible) in the Avirata, (i e the first 4 and in) Deshavirata (i e the 5th stages)

The degrees are the same here as above under Sutra 34 The wrong believer is the worst off

SUTRA 36

आज्ञापायविपाकसंस्थानविचयाय धर्म्यम् ॥ ३६ ॥

Ajnapayavipakasamsthanavichyayadharmam

धर्म्यध्यान Righteous concentration (is of 4 kinds i e,) contemplation of

1 आज्ञाविचय *Ajnavichaya* The Principles taken on the faith of the Scriptures as being the teachings of the Arhats.

2 अपायविचय, *Apayavichaya* As to how the universal wrong belief knowledge and conduct of people can be removed

3 विपाकविचय, *Vipakvichaya* The fruition of the 8 kinds of karmas

4 संस्थानविचय, *Sansthana* vichaya, The nature and constitution of the Universe

[This is possible from the (चतुर्थ गुणस्थान) 4th to the (सप्तमगुणस्थान) 7tht Spiritual stages]

SUTRA 37

शुक्ले चाद्ये पूर्वविदः ३७

Shukle chadye purvavidah

(शुक्लध्यान Pure concentration is also of 4 kinds) The first 2 kinds of pure concentration (are only possible to saints) possessed of a knowledge of the 14 पूर्व *Purvas*

(This is always present in the 8th and higher spiritual stages गुणस्थान up to 12th)

SUTRA 38

परे केवलिनः ॥ ३८ ॥

Parekevalinah

The last 2)kinds of शुक्लध्यान Pure concentration are peculiar) to the man of perfect knowledge केवलि (*kevalin*)

SUTRA 39

पृथक्त्वैकत्ववितर्कसूक्ष्मक्रियाप्रतिपातिव्युपरतक्रिया निवर्तीनि ॥ ३९ ॥

Prithaktvaikatvavitarkasuksmakriyapratipativyuparata-riyanivartini

(The 4 kinds of शुक्लध्यान Pure concentration are)

(1) पृथक्त्व वितर्क विचार, *Prithaktva vitarka vichara* Absorption in meditation of the SELF, but unconsciously allowing its different attributes to replace one another

(2) एकत्व वितर्क विचार, *Ekattva vitarka vichara* Absorption in one aspect of the SELF, without changing the particular aspect concentrated upon.

(3) सूक्ष्मक्रिया प्रतिपाति *Suksmakriyapratipati* The very fine vibratory movements in the soul even when it is deeply absorbed in itself in a kevalin.

(4) व्युपरत क्रिया निवर्ति, *Vyuparatakriyanivarti* Total absorption of the soul in itself, steady and undisturbably fixed without any motion or vibration whatsoever

SUTRA 40

त्र्येकयोगकाययोगायोगानाम् ॥ ४० ॥

Tryekayogakayayogayoganam

These 4 kinds of शुक्लध्यान, Pure Concentration inhere in

(The 1st पृथक्त्व वितर्क, *Prathaktvavitarka* vichara) in (the Saint) with 3 vibratory activities (of the soul through mind body and speech

(The 2nd, एकत्व वितर्क विचार, *Ekatvavitarkavichara*) in (the Saint) with only any one (of the 3 vibratory activities of the soul,)

(The 3rd सूक्ष्म क्रियाप्रतिपाति, *Suksmakriyapratipati*) in (the सयोग केवलि *Sayogakevalin* in the 13th stage गुणस्थान The yoga is) by the body (only)

(The 4th, व्युपरत क्रिया निवर्ति, *Vyuparatakriya Nivarti* in (the अयोग केवलि *Ayogakevalin* in the 14th stage, गुणस्थान There is) no yoga or vibratory activity of mind speech or body

SUTRA 41

एकाश्रये सवितर्कवीचारे पूर्वे ॥ ४१ ॥

Ekashrayesavitarkavicharepurve

The first 2 (kinds of Pure concentration are) attainable by one with Scriptural knowledge and consist of meditation upon a part of the Scriptural knowledge (In the concentration the part meditated upon may change in character or aspect

SUTRA 42

अवीचारं द्वितीयम् ॥ ४२ ॥

Avicharam dvitiyam

(But) the 2nd (kind of Pure concentration is) free from any such change.

SUTRA 43

वितर्क श्रुतम् ॥ ४३ ॥

Vitarkah shrutam

वितर्क, *Vitarka* means Scriptural knowledge

SUTRA 44

वीचारोऽर्थव्यञ्जनयोगसंक्रान्ति ॥ ४४ ॥

Vicharorthavyanjanayogasankranti

विचार *Vichara* means संक्रान्ति *Sankranti*, i e, change in अर्थ, *Artha*, the object of concentration itself; in व्यञ्जन, *Vyanjana* the verbal expression or in योग, *Yoga*, i e in the vibratory activity with which the concentration is going on i e mind speech or body

SUTRA 45

सम्यग्दृष्टिश्रावकविरतानन्तवियोजकदर्शनमोहक्षपकोपशमकोपशान्तमोहक्षपकक्षीणमोहजिनाः क्रमशोऽसंख्येयगुणनिर्जरा ॥ ४५ ॥

Samyagdristishravakaviratanantaviyojakadarshanamohaksapakopasamakopashantamohaksapakaksinamoha jinah kramashoasamkhyeyagunavirjara

The अविपाक *Avipaka* voluntary shedding of karmas (in the highest degree of each condition occurs) to an innumerable-fold extent in each of the following stages compared with the one immediately preceding it

(The first mention is of the condition of right belief i e, the 4th stage in Spiritual Development In this the shedding is inumerable fold असंख्यात गुणी compared with the condition of the soul just before it acquired right belief The stages as mentioned are)

सम्यग्दृष्टि *Samyagdrsti* One who has right belief the 4th गुणस्थान stage This stage is reached by (उपशम *Upashama*) The subsidence or by (क्षयोपशम *Ksayopashama*) Partial destruction subsidence and operation of the passions which feed wrong belief (अनन्तानुबंधी) and of 3 kinds of दर्शनमोहनीय right-belief deluding karmas

श्रावक *Shravaka* One who takes the layman s vows i e, partial vows the 5th (देशविरत) stage By क्षयोपशम *Ksayopashama* of 4 Passions which obscure renunciation

विरत *Virata* A saint with full vows in the 6th (प्रमत्त) and 7th (अप्रमत्त) stages By Ksayopashama of the 4 passions प्रत्याख्यान which obscure total renunciation

अनन्तवियोजक, *Anantaviyojaka.* The same when he transforms the karmic matter of passions which feed wrong belief into a lower or less injurious kind of karmic matter of passions

दर्शनमोहक्षपक *Darshanamohaksapaka* The same when he destroys the 3 kinds of right belief deluding karmas

उपशमक, *Upashamaka* A saint in the 8th 9th and 10th गुणस्थान stages when his (चारित्रमोहनीय) right-conduct deluding karmas are subsiding

उपशान्तमोह *Upashantamoha* In the 11th गुणस्थान stage when his right-conduct deluding karmas have totally subsided

क्षपक *Ksapaka,* A sait in the 8th, 9th and 10th stages when he is destroying the right conduct-deluding karmas

क्षीणमोह *Ksinamoha* In the 12th stage when he has destroyed totally the right coduct deluding karmas.

जिन *Jina* In the 13th stage when he becomes केवली, *Kevali* i e, Omniscient after having destroyed all the 4 घातिकर्म Destructive karmas i e knowledge conation right-belief and right-conduct deluding karmas and obstructive karmas (ज्ञानावरणीय दर्शनावरणीय मोहनीय अन्तराय)

In the 14th गुणस्थान stage the 4 अघातिया non-destructive karmas are also totally destroyed

SUTRA 46

पुलाकवकुशकुशीलनिर्ग्रन्थस्नातका निर्ग्रन्थाः ॥ ४६ ॥

Pulakavakushakushilanirgranthasnataka nirgranthah

The Nirgranthas the possessionless (or saints are of 5 kinds)

1 *Pulaka* (पुलाक) Like the husk i e some times there is a very slight lapse in the perfect observance of their primary vows (मूलगुण *Mulaguna)*

2 *Vakusha* (बकुश) They are still slightly coloured by some consideration of their body books and disciples.

3 *Kushila* (कुशील) Sometimes there is a very slight lapse in the perfect observance of their secondary vows, (उत्तरगुण *Uttraguna*)

4 *Nirgrantha,* निर्ग्रन्थ The absolutely passionless in the 11th

and 12th stages

5 *Snataka*, स्नातक The Kevali in the 13th and 14th stages

SUTRA 47

संयमश्रुतप्रतिसेवनातीर्थलिंगलेश्योपपादस्थानविकल्पतः साध्याः ॥ ४७

Samyamashrutapratisevanatirthalingaleshyopapada sthanavikalpatah sadhyah.

The distinctions (between the possessionless saints) should be considered with reference to the following (8) matters

1 *Samyama* (संयम) 5 sorts of conduct

2 *Sruta* (श्रुत), Scriptural knowledge

3 *Pratisevana* (प्रतिसेवना) Liability to transgression under another's compulsion

4 *Tirtha* (तीर्थ) Contemporary or successors of the Tirthankaras

5 *Linga* (लिंग) Sign i e saint भावलिंगी both in mind and external observances, and saint द्रव्यलिंगी less in mind and more in external observances

6 *Leshya*, (लेश्या) Thought colours

7 *Upapada* (उपपाद) Whether the saints would be reborn in the heavens or attain liberation

8 *Sthana* (स्थान) Their stages of conduct and degree of subjection to the Passions

अध्याय दसवां

CHAPTER X

SUTRA 1

मोहक्षयात् ज्ञानदर्शनावरणान्तरायक्षयाच्च केवलम् ॥ १ ॥

Mohaksayatjnanadarshanavaranantarayaksayachchakevalam

केवलज्ञान Perfect knowledge (is gained) by destroying the मोहनीय deluding karmas (in the end of the 10th गुणस्थान stage and then by simultaneous destruction of knowledge and conation observing karmas (ज्ञानावरण दर्शनावरण), and of obstructive karmas (अन्तराय) (in the end of the 12th गुणस्थान) stage

SUTRA 2

बन्धहेत्वभावनिर्जराभ्यां कृत्स्नकर्मविप्रमोक्षो मोक्षः ॥ २ ॥

Bandhahetvabhavanirjarabhyam kritsnakarmavi pramokso moksah

मोक्ष Liberation (is) the freedom from all karmic matter owing to the non existence of the cause of bondage and to the shedding (of all the karmas)

The karmas are destroyed as per stages

14 गुणस्थान *Gunasthanas* stages of Spiritual Development

The thought activity of the soul due to

उदय *Udaya* Operation

उपशम *Upashama* subsidence

क्षय *Ksaya* Destruction

क्षयोपशम *Ksayopasham* Destruction subsidence of मोहनीय *Mohaniya* deluding karmas and योग (*Yoga*) vibrations in the soul are called गुणस्थान *Gunasthanas* (Lt. The stages or place of attributes or परिणाम *Parinama* thought activity.) Their 14 names are

मिथ्यात्व *Mithyatva* Wrong belief *Delusion. The thought* activity of the soul due to the operation of the दर्शनमोहनीय right belief-deluding karmas In this *the soul does not* believe in the right path to Liberation From the 1st i.e. this गुणस्थान *Gunasthana* the soul goes to the 4th (गुणस्थान *Gunasthana*) always

2 सासादन Sasadana Downfall When there is operation in the 4th stage of one of the 4 अनन्तानुबन्धीकषाय Anantanubandhikashayas Error-feeling passions i e anger the soul falls down to the 1st stage through the 2nd and the thought-activity in the passage through is called सासादन Sasadana

3 मिश्र Misra mixed Operation of सम्यग्मिथ्यात्व Samyakmithyatvamohniyakarmas or Misra Mohniya Belief in right and wrong at one and the same time This is reached always on falling down from the 0th stage

4 अविरतसम्यक्त्व Aviratasamyaktva Vowless right belief Belief is produced by the उपशम, Upashama subsidence of the 4 अनन्तानुबन्धीकषाय Anantanubandhikasayas Error feeding passions and one are three kinds of दर्शनमोहनीय right-belief deluding karmas respectively, i e one for a soul who has never been or three for a soul who has been in possession of सम्यक्त्व Samyaktva right belief The soul here has belief in the path of Liberation but cannot observe the rules of conduct for attaining Liberation 3 kinds of thought-activity may be noted in this stage

(1) उपशमसम्यक्त्व Upasamasamyakta is attained by the उपशम Uapasama subsidence of 5 or 7 kinds of deluding karmas

(2) क्षायिकसम्यक्त्व Kshayikasamyakta is attained by the destruction of the 7 प्रकृति prakrties

(3) क्षयोपशमसम्यक्त्व Ksayopashamasamyakta is attained by the destruction or subsidence of 6 and the continuous operation of the 7th i e सम्यक्प्रकृतिमिथ्यात्व Samyakprakrti mithyatva right belief clouded occassionlly by the slightest wrong belief This 3rd kind of thoughtactivity is characterised by चल मल अगाढ i e the 3 defects

1 Chala Of being shaken in his right belief, e g, think ing that worship of शान्तिनाथ Santinatha will bring शान्ति calmness or that of पार्श्वनाथ Parsvanatha will remove obstacles etc. etc whereas all Arhats are the same

Mala Of having the thought activity soiled by one or more of the defects on transgressions, e g शंका, Sanka doubt

कांक्षा Kanksa desire of sense pleasures

विचिकित्सा Vichikitsa Hatred of the sick and deformed etc

अन्यदृष्टिप्रशंसा *Anyadrustiprasansa* Thinking admiringly of wrong believers and अन्यदृष्टिसंस्तव, *Anyadristisarsta a* Praising wrong believers

3 अगाढ *Agadha* Of losing firm hold of right belief e g, dedicating a temple and still thinking it to be one's own property,

5. देशविरत *Deshavirata* artial vows Taking the Partial vows All the 11 प्रतिमा *Pratimas* or stages of a layman's life come in this (These are given on page, 118 Chapter VII, 20)

6 प्रमत्तविरत *Pramattavirata* Imperfect vows A er renunciation of all worldly objects still occasionally to turn the mind to the service or needs of the body This is the pramatta-bhava careless slackness in concentration. Henceforth the stages are all in the life of a मुनि *Muni*, Saint

7 अप्रमत्तविरत, *Apramattavirata* Perfect vows Renouncing the careless slackness of the 6th gunasthana and being absorbed in spiritual contemplation (धर्मध्यान Righteous concentration of the highest type)

From here, there are 2 श्रेणी, *Srenis*, ways of a saint. (1) उपशमश्रेणी, *Upasamasreni* in which the चारित्रमोहनीय right-conduct-deluding karma subsides (2) क्षपकश्रेणी *Ksapakasreni* in which it is being destroyed This last is the necessary way to मोक्ष *Moksha* Liberation.

8 अपूर्वकरण *Apurvakarana* New thought activity, करण, *Karana* or thought activity which the saint's soul had never yet acquired This is the beginning of the 1st शुक्लध्यान *Sukla dhyan* pure concentration on the pure आत्म *Atma* or self

9 अनिवृत्तिकरण *Anivrittakarana* Advanced thought-activity Special thought activity of a still greater purity A stage of प्रथमशुक्लध्यान, *Prathamasukladhayana* 1st Sukladhyana.

10 सूक्ष्मसाम्पराय *Suksmasamparaya* Slightest delusion All passions are destroyed or have subsided except सूक्ष्मसंज्वलनलोभ very slight nominal greed this is also 1st Shukla dhyana

11 उपशान्तमोह *Upashantamoha*, or उपशान्तकषाय *Upashantakasaya* subsided delusion. A thoughtactivity which is produced by the उपशम subsidence of entire चारित्रमोहनीय right conduct-deluding karmas This is also 1st Shukladhyana A saint must

fall down from here. But if strong enough he can resume his ascet from the उपश, Ksnapaka mode of ascent in the 8th tage

12. क्षीणमोह Kshinamoha Delusionless The entire चारित्रमोहनीय right conduct-deluding karmas are destroyed in this stage And the thought activity produced belongs to the 2nd शुक्लध्यान, Sukladhayan The saint attaining this dose so directly from the 10th stage without passing through the 11th stage

13. सयोगकेवलि, Sayogakevali Vibrating Perfect soul. Before commencing this the soul must have destroyed the three remaining घातियाकर्म Destructive karmas (ज्ञानावरणीय दर्शनावरणीय, अन्तराय) Knowledge obscuring conation obscuring and obstructive karmas Here the soul becomes अर्हन्त Arhat or Perfect soul in human body with vibrations in it Preaching and Peregrinations belong to this stage.

14. अयोगकेवली Ayoga kevali Vibrationless perfect soul. This is attained when there is before the sayoga kevali's Liberation just enough time to speak out the 5 letters अ इ उ ऋ लृ In this stage —a very brief one indeed the vibrations of the holy body cease and the soul attainig Peace and Bliss

SUTRA 3

औपशमिकादिभव्यत्वानां च ॥ ३ ॥

Aupasamikadibhavyatvanam cha

There is also non existence of भाव bhava or thought-activity) due to the operation subsidence and to the destruction subsidence and operation of the karma and of भव्यत्व bhavyatva (i e the capacity of becoming liberated

(Of course the क्षायिक kshayika thought activity due to a total extinction of karmas is retained and also पारिणामिक Parinamika, the own natural activity of the soul i e, its जीवत्व Jivatva, soulness or livingness.)

SUTRA 4

अन्यत्र केवलसम्यक्त्वज्ञानदर्शनसिद्धत्वेभ्यः ॥ ४ ॥

Anyat kevala samyaktvajnana darsana siddhatvebhyah

Othe wise there remain सम्यक्त perfect-right belief ज्ञान perfect-right knowledge दर्शन perfect conation and सिद्धत्व the state of having accomplished All

(Perfect conation and perfect knowledge imply perfect power

बन also

SUTRA 5

तदनन्तरमूर्ध्वं गच्छत्यालोकान्तात् ॥ ५ ॥

Tadanantaamurddhvam gachchhantyalokantat.

After that (liberation from all karmas]the liberated souls go upward (right vertically) to the end of लोक *Loka* (or the Universe)

SUTRA 6 and 7

पूर्वप्रयोगादसङ्गत्वाद्बन्धच्छेदात्तथागतिपरिणामाच्च ॥ ६ ॥

आविद्धकुलालचक्रवद्व्यपगतलेपालाबुवदेरण्डबीजवदग्निशिखावच्च ॥ ७ ॥

(6th) Purvaprayogadasangatva dbandhachhedattathagati pavinamachcha

(7th) Aviddhakulalachakravadvyapagatalepalambuvadekan davijavadagnisikhavachcha

(This upward motion is due to 4 considerations)

(1) पूर्वप्रयोग् *Purvaprayogata* (momentum or instinct produced in the soul) by its previous activity, (directed to the attainment of Liberation) like a potter s wheel (which once set in motion goes on) circling (even when the potter s hand and wand are both taken away)

(2) असङ्गत्व *Asangatvat* The non association or non existence of the company (which kept it down i e the absence of karmas) like (an empty) gourd (which) coated with clay (sinks down in water but the clay) being washed off (it bobs up to the surface again.)

(3) बन्धच्छेद *Bandhachchedat*, (On account of) the bondage being broken like the castor-bean (which flies up at once when the fruit which kept it in confinement is broken open)

(4) तथागतिपरिणाम *Tathagatiparinamat* (Due to its being the soul s) nature to go upwards, like the flames of fire

SUTRA 8

धर्मास्तिकायाभावात् ॥ ८ ॥

Dharmastikayabhavat

(But it does not rise higher than the extreme limit to लोक *Loka* or the Universe) because (beyond it there is) the non existence of धर्मास्तिकाय *Dharmastikaya* or the medium of motion

SUTRA 9

क्षेत्रकालगतिलिंगतीर्थचारित्रप्रत्येकबुद्धबोधितज्ञानावगाहनान्तरसंख्याल्पबहुत्वत
साध्या ॥ ९ ॥

Ksetra kala gati linga tirtha charitra pratyeka buddha bodhita janana vagahanantara samkhyalpa bahutvata sadhyah

(The Liberated soul) should be considered (with reference to the following)

1 क्षेत्र Space (1) The liberation is in its own self

(2) The Liberated soul is in सिद्धक्षेत्र *Siddhaksetra* the place of the Liberated.

(3) The place of the Liberated आकाश *Akasa* space.

(4) The place in its last incarnation such soul could have been born only in one of the 15 कर्मभूमि *Karmabhumis* in the 2½ द्वीप *Dvipas*.

(5) The Liberated soul in the 2½ Dvipas may have been in the 15 Karma bhumis but being kid napped may have been left any where in the 2½ dvipas, from which he attained Liberation Therefore the place of the Liberated is as big as the 2½ dvipas i e 45 lacs yojanas in diameter

2 काल *Kala* Time (1) Liberation takes place only in one samaya (समय)

(2) Liberation takes place only when the last incarnation is in the end of the 3rd or in the 4th age of the अवसर्पिणी *Avasarpini* But those born in the 4th can attain salvation in the 5th age. And in the उत्सर्पिणी, *Utsarpini* in the correspooding agesl

(3) But in kid-napping from विदेह, *Videhas*, in al ages as also in the Videhas from where is Liberation at all times

3 गति *Gati* Condition of Existence

(1) Liberated soul is in the 5th or सिद्धगति *Siddhagati*

(2) Liberated soul comes up only from the human condition of existence

4 लिंग *Linga* Sex (1) There is no sex in liberated state

(2) In the last incarnation, the soul may have

been feminine, masculine or common in thought-actrity or bhavas (भावलिंग) in ascending up to the 9th stage In the 10th stage there are no such bhavas but the body must be masculine dravya (द्रव्यलिंग)

5 तीर्थ *Tirtha* (1) Liberated soul was a तीर्थंकर *Tirthankara*
(2) was not a Tirthankara

6. चारित्र *Charitra* Conduct According to the particular conduct which led him to Liberation

7 प्रत्येकबुद्धबोधित *Pratyeka buddha bodhita* Where he was led to the path of Liberation by his own intuition or by the preept of another

8 ज्ञान *Jnana* Knowledge According to the kinds of knowledge which preceded perfect knowledge (केवलज्ञान) They may be 2 3 or 4 kinds

9 अवगाहन, Avagahana Stature i e the form and stature of his last body
Maximum 525 धनुष *Dhanusa*=2100 हाथ *Haths*
Minimum 3½ Haths

10 अन्तर *Antara* Interval. When one or more souls are Liberated, there may be a minimum interval of one समय *Samaya* a maximum interval of 6 months before others are Liberated It the rise of Liberated souls is continuous it must continue at least for 2 samayas and at most for 8 samayas

11 संख्या *Samkhya* Number
(1) Minimum 1 soul in one samaya
Maximum 108 souls in one samaya
(2) In every 6 months and 8 samayas 608 souls must be liberated

12 अल्पबहुत्व *Alpa bahutva* Quantty as to more or less
(1) More will go from the region of their birth
Less will go when kid napped.
(2) Less from जम्बूद्वीप *Jambu dvipa* More fromm धातकीखण्ड *Dhataki khanda* still more fro पुष्करवर द्वीप *Puskaravara dvipa*



PRINTED BY HON PRIN ADVISOR M L. JAIN M A , J D FROM
SRI DESH BHUSHAN PRESS, DELHI-6

